

A
Christian Library.

CONSISTING OF
EXTRACTS from and ABRIDGMENTS of
THE
CHOICEST PIECES
OF

Practical Divinity,

Which have been publish'd in the

ENGLISH TONGUE.

IN FIFTY VOLUMES.

By JOHN WESLEY, M. A.

Late FELLOW of *Lincoln-College*, OXFORD.

VOL. VI.

BRISTOL:

Printed by FELIX FARLEY.

M.D.CC.LI.

N
Christian Library.

COMMITTEE OF
EXAMINATION AND ARRANGEMENTS OF

THE
CHOICEST PIECES



Practical
MORALITY
IN
ENGLISH TONGUE

IN FIFTY VOLUMES.

BY JOHN WESLEY, M.A.
Lecturer in Divinity at the University of Oxford.

VOL. VI.

BRISTOL:
Printed by T. F. HARRIS.

A
SUPPLEMENT

To Mr. *FOX*'s

A C T S

AND

MONUMENTS.

EXTRACTED

From Mr. *CLARK*'s

GENERAL

Martyrology.

SUPPLEMENT

To Mr. F. O. K.

A C T S

AND

MONUMENTS.

EXTRACTED

From Mr. CLARK'S

GENERAL

Antiquary.



TO THE

CHRISTIAN READER.

THOU hast here presented to thy View that strange Sight which astonished *Moses*, *Exod. iii. 3. A Bush burning with Fire, and not consumed.* A lively Emblem of the Church, oft Times all on a Flame with the Fire of Persecution; and yet so far from being consumed, that *the Blood of the MARTYRS proves the Seed of the Church.* And indeed she is the only and true *Salamander*, that can live in the Fire: Yet this, not by any Strength of her own, but because the Angel of the Covenant, even the **LORD JESUS CHRIST**, is in the Bush; either to slack the Fire, or to strengthen the Bush, and make it incombustible. In this Book thou may'st see, as in a Mirror, what hath been the Portion of the People of God, from the Creation hitherto, *viz. Through many Tribulations to enter into*

the Kingdom of Heaven. Here thou hast a certain and infallible Mark of the true Church of *Christ*, viz. To be hated and persecuted by the Devil and his Instruments. Here thou mayest see what is the constant Concomitant of the Gospel, when it is receiv'd in the Love and Power of it, viz. Persecution, according to that of the Apostle, *Ye became Followers of us, and of the LORD, having received the Word in much Affliction.* Neither yet is God an hard Master in dealing thus with his faithful Servants. He knows that when Afflictions hang heaviest, corrupt Affections hang loosest upon his Children. Yet doth not the LORD afflict willingly; nor grieve the Children of Men, to crush under his Feet all the Prisoners of the Earth; but He will hereby try who are His, in Deed and in Truth; not in Name and Profession only.

ONE Thing is very remarkable in this History, that before any great Persecution befell the Church, the holy Men of those Times observed there was some great Decay of Zeal, and of the Power of Godliness; or some Contentions and Quarrels amongst the People of God, or
some

some Sin or other, that provoked God against them; and then God let loose the Persecutors upon his own Children, to bring them in unto Him: Which done, He not only restrains their Rage, but casts the Rod into the Fire. *If Judgment begin at the House of God, what shall the End of them be, that obey not the Gospel of God?* Much excellent Use may be made of this History: As, teaching us,

1. THAT whosoever will take *Christ*, must take his Cross as well as his Crown; his Sufferings as well as his Salvation.

2. THAT GOD's Children are like Stars that shine brightest in the darkest Night: Like the Palm-Tree, which proves the better for pressing. Yea, GOD knoweth that we are best, when we are worst; and live holiest, when we die fastest; and therefore He frames his Dealing to our Disposition; seeking rather to profit, than to please us.

3. THAT when GOD exposeth us to Persecution, He expects our speedy and thorough Reformation, if we desire the Affliction to be removed. For, as it were

were to no Purpose for the Finer to put his Gold into the Fire, except it lie there 'till it be refined: So it were to small Purpose for GOD to lay Afflictions on us, if He should remove them, before we were better'd thereby. Whereas Afflictions, like *Lot's* Angels, will soon away, when they have done their Errand.

4. THAT we should with Patience submit to the afflicting Hand of the all-wise GOD, saying with the Church: *I will bear the Indignation of the LORD, because I have sinned against Him*: Considering also that Impatience under Affliction, makes it much more grievous. As a Man in a Fever, by tossing and tumbling, exasperates the Disease, and encreaseth his own Grief.

5. THAT *all that will live godly in Christ Jesus, must suffer Persecution*. It hath been the Portion of all the Saints, from the Creation hitherto. *What Son is there whom the Father chasteneth not?* One SON indeed GOD had without Sin, but not without Sorrow; for though *Christ*, his natural Son, was without Corruption, yet not without Correction; though he was without Crime, yet not without a Scourge,

Scourge. And if they did these Things to the green Tree, what shall be done to the dry? And behold the wonderful Wisdom of God herein! Who, by these Afflictions, separates the Sin that He hates, from the Son that He loves; and keeps him by these Thorns, from breaking over into *Satan's* Pastures, that would fat him indeed, but only to the Slaughter.

Thine in the LORD,

SAMUEL CLARK.

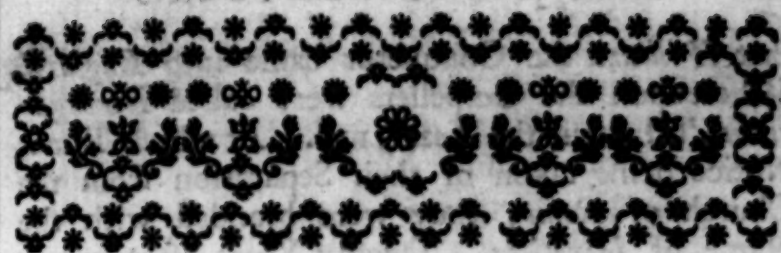


THE

6 JY 64

3 AUGUST 1944.

THE



THE
PERSECUTION
OF THE
Waldenses,

Which began in the Year 1660.

WHEN the Darkness of Popery had over-
spread the Christian World, so that
Kings and Princes employed their Au-
thority to establish the *Romish* Idolatry,
appointing to slaughter such as denied
Transubstantiation, Adoration of the Host, bow-
ing the Knees before it, &c. This occasioned
many Christians to detest this Superstition, as un-
known to the Apostles and Primitive Church.
And first of all, God raised up *Berengarius*, pre-
sently after the Year 1000, who boldly and faith-
fully preached the Truth, 'till about the Time,
that

that *William* the Conqueror came into *England*. Whereupon the Gospellers were called *Berengarians*, 'till about the Year 1110. At which Time, Notice being taken of their Separation from the Church of *Rome*, they were branded with the Name of *Hereticks*. Twenty Years after, when they were grown into a Multitude, they had one *Peter Bruis* for their most famous Preacher, who taught long and publickly at *Tholouse*, under the Protection of Earl *Hildephonfus*. Whereupon they were called *Petro-Brusians*. *Peter Bruis*, in the Year 1220, published their Tenets in a Book, wherein he declared both the Ground of their Doctrine, and the Causes of their Separation from the *Romish* Church.

TWENTY Years after this, they were grown into a mighty Multitude, about the Year 1140, whereupon the Pope of *Rome* stirred up his most learned Followers, to write against them; and warned Princes to banish them out of their Territories.

IN the Year 1147, they had *Henry* of *Tholouse* for their most eminent Preacher, whereupon they began to be called *Henricians*. And because they were well read in the Scriptures, especially in the Epistles of *St. Paul*, whom by Way of Eminency, they called, *The Apostle*, they were called *Apostolicks*. Shortly after, God raised up *Peter Valdo*, a Citizen of *Lyons*, in *France*, who shewed himself most courageous in opposing the Popish Inventions. He was the more eargerly hearkened unto, because he was in high Esteem for his Learning and Piety, and his Liberality to the Poor. Besides the nourishing of the Bodies of Men, he also fed their Souls, by exhorting them to seek *Jesus Christ*, and Salvation by Him. The Archbishop of *Lyons* being informed that *Valdo* not only
used

used thus to instruct the People; but also boldly taxed the Vices, Luxury, and Pride of the Pope and his Clergy, forbad him the same, on Pain of Excommunication. *Valdo* replied: *That he could not be silent in a Cause of so great Importance, as the Salvation of Men's Souls; wherein he must obey God, rather than Man.* Then the Archbishop sought to have him apprehended, but could not effect it; for *Valdo* had many Friends, and was generally beloved, wherefore he continued (tho' closely) in *Lyons*, three Years.

POPE *Alexander III.* at length cursed *Valdo*, and his Adherents; commanding the Archbishop to proceed against them, to their utter Extirpation; whereupon they were wholly chased out of *Lyons*. His Followers were then called *Waldenses*, who afterwards spread themselves into divers Countries.

THE chief Opinions of the *Waldenses*, ye have seen in the former Part of this Work.

VALDO himself went into *Dauphiny*, conversing in the Mountains of the same Province, with certain rude Persons, yet capable of receiving the Truth. His Disciples also spread into *Picardy*, whence they were called *Picards*. Against whom afterwards King *Philip* took Arms, overthrew 300 Gentlemen's Houses, and destroyed some walled Towns; pursuing them into *Flanders*, whither they fled, and causing many of them there to be burnt to Death.

THIS Persecution caused many of them to fly into *Germany*, and *Alsatia*, where they spread their Doctrine. Shortly after, the Bishops of *Mayence* and *Strasburgh*, raised up a great Persecution against them, causing 35 Burgeses of *Mayence*, to be burnt in one Fire, and 18 in another.

AT *Strasburgh*, Eighty were burnt, at the Instance of the Bishop. Yet Multitudes of People received such Edification by the Exhortations, Constancy, and Patience of the Martyrs, that in the Year 1315, in the County of *Passau*, and about *Bohemia*, there were above Eighty Thousand Persons, that made Profession of the same Faith.

IN the Year 1660, some of them came into *England*, and were punished at *Oxford* in the most barbarous Manner. Three Years after, in the Council of *Tours*, in *France*, Pope *Alexander III.* made a Decree, That these *Gospellers*, and all their Favourers, should be excommunicated; and that none should sell them any Thing, or buy any Thing of them, according as it was prophesied, *Rev. xiii. 17.*

BUT notwithstanding all these Devices, they had goodly Churches in *Bulgary*, *Croatia*, *Dalmatia* and *Hungary*. The Popish Monks, to make them odious, and to have the better Occasion to persecute them, raised up many foul Slanders of them, as, That they were Sorcerers, Sodomites, and the like. That they assembled themselves in the Night-time; and that the Pastors commanded the Lights to be put out, saying: *Catch who catch can.* They charged them also with many foul and false Opinions. From which Accusations, they, by a publick Apology, cleared themselves; which they published both in *French*, and their own Language.

REINERUS, the Monk, says of them, That “amongst all those which have risen up against the Church of *Rome*, the *Waldenses* were the most dangerous, in Regard of their long Continuance: For some say, This Sect hath continued from the
Time

Time of Pope *Sylvester*; and some say, From the Apostles Time. And because this Sect is more general, and there is scarce any Country, in which it has not taken Footing; And because it hath a great Appearance of Piety; (for they carry themselves uprightly before Men, and believe rightly touching GOD in all Things, holding all the Articles of the Creed; only they hate and revile the Church of *Rome*;) and therefore (saith he) they are easily believed by the People."

VALDO, notwithstanding all the Curfes of the Pope, continued to publish, That the Pope was Antichrist, the Mass an Abomination, the Host an Idol, and Purgatory a Fable. Whereupon Pope *Innocent III.* in the Year 1198, seeing the other Remedies were not sufficient to suppress these Hereticks, authorised certain Monks, Inquisitors, to apprehend and deliver them to the Secular Power. By this Means the People were delivered by Thousands into the Magistrates Hands, and by them to the Executioners; whereby, in a few Years, all Christendom was moved with Compassion, to see all those burnt and hanged, that did trust only in *Christ* for Salvation.

THE Pope seeing that this suppressed not, but rather increased the Number of his Enemies, sent certain Bishops and Monks to preach in those Places of the *Waldenses*; but their Preaching converted not any of them from their former Opinions.

AMONGST those Monks, was *Dominic*, a zealous Persecutor of the Saints of GOD, both in Word and Deed; who seeing himself to be in Authority, instituted an Order of Begging-Monks, called after his Name *Dominicans*; which Order was confirmed by the Pope, for their zealous as-

sisting him against the *Waldenses*. *Dominic* laboured in the Inquisition, with such Contentment to the Popes, that from that Time forward, the Monks of his Order have always been employed in the Inquisition.

THE Power of these Inquisitors was without Limitation, they could assemble the People by the Sound of a Bell, when they pleased; proceed against the Bishops themselves; imprison and release without Controul; any Accusation was sufficient with them; a Sorcerer, a Whore was a sufficient Witness in the Case of pretended Heresy. It mattered not who accused, or whether by Word of Mouth, or Ticket thrown in before the Inquisitor; for Process was thereby framed without Party, without Witness, or without other Law, than the Pleasure of the Inquisitors.

To be rich, was a Crime near to Heresy; and he that had any Thing to lose, was in the Way to be undone, either as an Heretick, or as a Favourer of them: Yea, bare Suspicion stopped the Mouths of Parents, Kinsfolk, and Friends, that they durst not interceed each for the other. If any did but convey a Cup of cold Water, or a Pad of Straw to them that lay in stinking Dungeons, he was condemned, and brought to the same or worse Extremities.

No Advocate durst undertake the Defence of his nearest Kinsman, or Friend. No Notary durst receive any Act in his Favour; yea, Death itself made not an End of their Punishment, for sometimes they passed Sentence against the Bones of the Dead, to burn them, it may be thirty Years after the Death of the Party accused.

SUCH as were Heirs, had nothing certain; for if their Fathers or Kindred were accused, they durst not undertake the Defence of their own Right, without the Crime or Suspicion of Heresy. The greatest and richest amongst the People, were constrained even to adore these Monks Inquisitors, and to give them great Sums for the Building of their Convents, for Fear of being accused of Heresy.

AND the better to keep the People in Awe, these Inquisitors would sometimes lead in Triumph their Prisoners in Procession; enjoining some of them to whip themselves; others to go in their Shirts bare-foot and bare-headed, having a Withe about their Necks, and a Torch in their Hands for the greater Terror to the Beholders.

SOME of the accused were sent into the Holy Land, or enrolled for some other Expedition against the *Turks*. In the mean Time the Fathers Inquisitors took Possession of their Houses and Goods; and when they returned home, they must not enquire, Whether these Monks had, in their Absence, lain with their Wives, lest they should be condemned as Apostates.

IN the Year 1201, a Knight that was one of these *Waldenses*, called *Enraudus*, whom *Henry*, Earl of *Nivers* had made Governor of his Land, was accused of Heresy, and brought before the Pope's Legate, who called a Council at *Paris* against him, consisting of the Archbishops, Bishops, and Ministers of *Paris*, who condemn'd him for an Heretick, and so delivered him to the Secular Power, by whom he was burned.

IN *October*, 1207, in the Town of *Mont-Royal*, near *Carcasson*, in the Earldom of *Tholouse*, there

was held a famous Disputation, between *Didacus*, a Spaniard, Friar *Dominic*, *Peter*, of the New Castle, the Pope's Legate, and *Ralph* his Colleague, on the one Part, and *Arnold Hot*, Pastor of the *Albigenses*, with some other of his Fellow-Labourers, on the other Part. The Arbitrators were two Noblemen, named *Bernard de Villa Nova*, and *Pernail*, of *Arras*; and two Plebeians, named *Raymond Godius*, and *Arnold Riberia*. The Questions disputed upon, were these:

FIRST, That the Church of *Rome* is not the Spouse of *Christ*, nor an Holy Church; but an impure one.

SECONDLY, That their Ecclesiastical Polity is not good, nor holy, nor established by *Jesus Christ*.

THIRDLY, That Mass, as it is celebrated therein, was not instituted by *Christ*, or his Apostles.

THE Bishop undertook to prove the Contrary: But after three Days Disputation, he desired fifteen Days to commit his Arguments to Writing; and *Arnold Hot* required eight Days to put in his Answer.

AT the Day appointed, the Bishop brought in a very long Writing; and *Hot* desired to answer by Word of Mouth, intreating his Auditors, That he might not seem troublesome to them, if he were long in answering so long a Discourse. And it was granted, That he should be heard with Patience, without Interruption; and so he discoursed several Hours for four Days together, to the great Admiration of all that heard him. And so ready was he therein, that all the Bishops, Abbots, Monks,

Monks, and Priests, wished themselves elsewhere. For he framed his Answer to each Point in Order, as it was set down in the Writing, and that with such Plainness and Perspicuity, that he gave all that were present to understand, That the Bishop, tho' he had written much, yet he had concluded nothing to the Advantage of the Church of *Rome*. Then *Arnold* requested, That forasmuch as the Bishops, and himself, in the Beginning of the Conference, were bound to prove, whatsoever they affirmed, by the Word of GOD only; it might now be imposed upon the Bishops and Priests, to make good their Mass as they sing it, Part by Part, to have been instituted by the Son of GOD, and so used by the Apostles. But the Bishops were not able to prove this; whereupon they were much ashamed. *Arnold* proceeded to prove, That it was not instituted by *Christ*, or his Apostles. For (said he) *if the Mass were the Holy Supper, instituted by our Saviour, there would remain after the Consecration, that which was in the Supper of our LORD, viz. Bread. But in the Mass, there is no Bread: For by Transubstantiation the Bread is vanished; therefore the Mass is not the Holy Supper of the LORD.* The Bishops, Legates, Monks, and Priests having nothing to answer to these Things, retired, and dissolved the Assembly.

BETWEEN the Years 1176, the Time when the Inquisition was first erected, to the Year 1228, there was so great a Havock made of poor Christians, that the Archbishops of *Aix*, *Arles*, and *Narbonne*, being assembled at the Request of the said Inquisitors, to confer with them about divers Difficulties in the Execution of their Offices, had Compassion of the great Number that were accused and cast into Prison, saying: *We hear that you have apprehended such a Multitude of the Waldenses, that it is not only impossible to defray the Charge of their Food,*

but to provide Lime and Stone to build Prisons for them; we therefore advise you to forbear this Rigour, 'till the Pope be advertised, and direct what he will have done in this Case. Yet notwithstanding all this Cruelty, there was, in the Year 1260, above 800,000 Persons that made Profession of the Faith of the Waldenses.

BESIDES the Churches that they had in *Valentino*, where their Faith was propagated from the Father to the Son; their Religion spread also beyond the *Alps*, into the Valley of *Pragela*, within the Jurisdiction of the Archbishop of *Turin*, from whence were peopled the *Waldensian* Vallies of *Piedmont*, *La Perouse*, *S. Martin*, *Angrogne*, &c. This Valley of *Pragela* was one of the safest retiring Places that the *Waldenses* had, being environed on all Sides with Mountains almost inaccessible, into the Caves, whereof they retired in the Times of Persecution. And although they were weakened on all Sides, environ'd with Enemies, and in Danger of being apprehended, if they looked but out of their Doors; yet, there never was any worldly Respect that had Power to alter their holy Resolution, from the Father to the Son, to serve GOD; taking his Word for the Rule of their Faith, and his Law for the Rule of their Obedience. Yea, no sooner were the Infants weaned from their Mothers Breasts, but their Parents took Care to instruct them in the Christian Faith.

THEIR Pastors also did not only preach to them on the *Sabbath-Days*, but went in the Week Days, to instruct them in the Villages and Hamlets, not sparing themselves for the Roughness of the Rocks, the Coldness of the Air, and the Cragginess of the Country.

BUT

BUT whilst they thus busily sought the Advancement of GOD's Glory, and their own Salvation, the Devil raised up a Persecution against them, in the Year 1380, by a Monk Inquisitor, called *Francis Boralli*, who had a Commission to enquire after the *Waldenses* in *Aix, Arles, Ambrun, Vienne, Geneva, Ambone, Savoy*, the *Venetian Country*, the Principality of *Orange*, the City of *Avignon*, &c. which Commission he received from Pope *Clement VII.*

THIS Monk cited to appear at *Ambrun*, all the Inhabitants of *Frassiniere, Argentine*, and the *Valley Pute*, upon Pain of Excommunication: But they appeared not, whereupon they were condemned of Contumacy, and excommunicated. And for the Space of thirteen Years, as he caught any of them, he delivered them up to the Secular Power to be burnt at *Grenoble*: the Number of whom, was 150 Men, divers Women, with many of their Sons and Daughters, besides about 80 Persons of *Argentine*.

THE Inquisitors adjudged to themselves two Parts of all their Goods, and the third Part to the Temporal Powers. They forbad all their Neighbours also to assist, receive, visit, or defend them, or to converse with them in any Sort, upon Pain of being punished as *Hereticks*.

THE *Waldenses*, of the Valley of *Pragela*, in the Year 1400, were assaulted by their Enemies, on the Side of *Susa*, in *Piedmont*: But most of their Assaults proved in vain, because they retired into the Mountains, hiding themselves in the Caves thereof, from whence they much endamaged those that came to assail them. Their Enemies seeing this, came upon them in the Depth of Winter, when those People never suspected it, all the Mountains

tains being covered with Snow: Thereupon they retired into the highest Mountain of all the *Alps*, together with their Wives and Children; the Mothers carrying some in their Cradles, and leading others by the Hand; yet the Enemy followed them 'till Night, and slew many before they could recover the Mountain; and they which were so slain, had the better Bargain: For Night coming on, these poor People being in the Snow, without any Means to make a Fire for their Infants, many of them were benumbed, and in the Morning above 80 of them were frozen to Death in their Cradles, and most of their Mothers died also; besides divers others were giving up the last Gasp. The Enemies lay all Night in these People's Houses, which they ransacked and pillaged, and so return'd to *Susa*; but by the Way, they met with a poor *Waldensian* Woman, whom they hanged upon a Tree, and so departed.

THE *Waldenses*, of the Valley of *Frassiniere*, were greatly persecuted by the Archbishop of *Ambun*, in the Year 1460, who made a Monk, called *John Vayleti*, his Commissioner against them; which Monk proceeded with such Diligence and Violence, that scarce any Person could escape his Hands, but that he was either apprehended for an Heretick, or a Favourer of them; whereby many Papists suffered among the Rest. This caused them to petition King *Lewis XI.* of *France*, to stay the Course of that Persecution. The King thereupon wrote his Letter to the Governor of *Dauphiny*, signifying; That whereas the Inquisitors had daily sent forth their Process, against many poor People in those Parts, without reasonable Cause; putting some to the Rack, and condemning them for Matters, whereof they were never guilty, and which they could not prove by any Witness; and of others they had exacted great Sums

Sums of Money, and had divers Ways unjustly vexed and molested them: He therefore decreed, That for the Time to come, all such Proceſs ſhould be void, and of none Effect.

YET the Archbishop did not ceaſe to perſecute them to the uttermoſt of his Power, ſo that he cauſed moſt of them to fly away; only *James Pateneri* ſtood to it, averring before the Court, That he was unjustly vexed, contrary to the King's Letters; demanding a Copy of the Proceedings, that he might right himſelf by Law. The Archbishop thereupon left him, and fell upon thoſe that wanted the like Courage, citing the Conſuls of *Frassiniera*, to answer for themſelves, and all the Inhabitants of their Valley. But they reſuſed, ſaying: That they had nothing to ſay before the Archbishop, ſeeing their Cauſe was now depending before the King, and his Council; proteſting againſt the Archbishop's Power, and demanding a Copy of the King's Letter: But the Archbishop, notwithstanding this Proteſtation, ſent them to the Fire, without any other Indictment. However ſhortly after, the Archbishop died, and ſo ended this Perſecution, in 1487.

IN the Year 1488, Pope *Innocent VIII.* ſent *Albert de Capitaneis*, Archdeacon of *Cremona* againſt theſe *Waldenſes*, who craved Aid of the King's Lieutenant of *Dauphiny*. The Lieutenant levied Troops for his Service, and at the Archdeacon's Requeſt, led them againſt the *Waldenſes*, in the Valley of *Loyſe*, and to colour his Proceedings, took a Counſellor of the Court along with him. But when they came to the Valley, they found no Inhabitants; for they were all retired into their Caves, in the high Mountains, having carried their little Children, and all their Proviſion of Food
with

with them. Then did the Lieutenant cause much Wood to be laid to the Mouth of the Caves, and set it on Fire, so that some were choaked with Smoke; others burnt with the Fire; others cast themselves headlong from the Rocks, and were dashed to Pieces; and if any stirred out, they were presently slain by the Soldiers.

THERE were found within the Caves, 400 Infants stifled in their Cradles, or in the Arms of their dead Mothers; and in all, there perish'd above 3000 Men and Women; so that there were no Inhabitants left in all that Valley. And to prevent the Coming of any more of them thither, the Lieutenant gave all their Goods and Possessions to whom he pleased.

THEN he march'd against them of *Pragela*, and *Frassiniere*, but they, providing for their own Safety, attended him at the Passages and narrow Straits of their Vallies, so that he was forced to retire.

AFTER a While, *Albert de Capitaneis*, being called to another Place, he substituted a *Franciscan*, named *Francis Ploieri*, who in 1489, began anew to inform against the *Waldenses*, of *Frassiniere*, citing them to appear before him at *Ambrun*, and for non-appearing, he excommunicated them, and condemn'd them for Hereticks, to be deliver'd to the Secular Power, and their Goods to be confiscated.

THIS Persecution grew exceeding hot, the Inquisitor and Counsellor sending as many as they could catch to the Fire, without admitting any Appeal; and if any interceded for them, though the Father for the Child, or the Child for the Father,

ther, he was presently committed to Prison, and indicted as a Favourer of Hereticks.

IN the Year 1500, the President of *Provence* made a Speech to the Assembly of Estates to root out these *Waldenses*: Whereupon they raised an Army for effecting of it: But as soon as the Men were in Arms, it pleased GOD, by the Death of King *Francis*, to put an End to that Design, whereby the *Waldensian* Churches in *Dauphiny* enjoyed Peace, and were well furnished with godly Pastors, who held them in the Exercise, of Religion, though they were in continual Danger of being persecuted to Death.

THE *Waldenses* in *Dauphiny*, many Years before this being multiplied, so that the Country could not feed them, dispersed themselves abroad into divers Parts; whereof some went into *Piedmont*, who lived in great Love with those of *Dauphiny*; and though they were always oppressed, yet with hearty Love and Charity, they ever succoured one another; not sparing their Lives and Goods for their mutual Conversation.

THE first Persecution in *Piedmont* was occasioned by the Priests, who complained to the Archbishop of *Turin*, That these People lived not according to the Manner and Belief of the Church of *Rome*: That they offered not for the Dead, cared not for Masses, Absolutions, or to get any of theirs out of the Pains of Purgatory. Hereupon the Archbishop persecuted them, complaining of them to their Prince, to make them odious. But the Prince enquiring of their Neighbours, heard they were of a good Conversation, fearing GOD, without Deceit or Malice, loving Plain Dealing, and always ready to serve their Prince. He therefore purposed not to molest them. But the Priests ever

anon catching one or other of them, they deliver'd them to the Inquisitors, and the Inquisitors to the Executioners; so that there was scarce a Town or City in *Piedmont*, where some of them had not been put to Death.

THE Monks Inquisitors daily sent out Procefs against them, and as they could apprehend any of them, deliver'd them over to the Secular Power. This Persecution lasted to the Year 1532, at which Time the *Waldenses* order'd, That their Exercises of Religion should be perform'd no more in Covert, as formerly they had been; but in Publick, that every one might know them; and that their Pastors should preach the Gospel openly, not fearing any Persecution that might happen unto them.

THE Prince being advertis'd hereof, was highly offended with them, and thereupon caus'd one of his Commanders to haste with his Troops into the said Vallies, which was performed with such Diligence, That he was enter'd with 500 Horse and Foot, before they were aware, ransacking, plundering and wasting all before them. Then the *Waldenses* left their Ploughs, putting themselves into Passes, and with their Slings charged their Enemies, with such a Multitude of Stones, that they were constrained to fly, and abandon their Prey, many remaining dead upon the Ground.

THIS News was presently carry'd to the Prince, and withall he was told, That these People were not to be subdued with Arms, they knowing better the Straits of their Country, than the Assailants; and that the Skin of one of the *Waldenses* would cost him the Lives of a Dozen of his other Subjects; whereupon he used Arms no more against

them,

them, but as any of them were caught in *Piedmont*, he put them to Death.

BUT shortly after, there happen'd Wars between King *Francis I.* and the Princes of *Piedmont*, which, through GOD's Grace, turn'd to the great Peace of these People; which Peace continued 'till Pope *Paul III.* solicited the Parliament of *Turin*, to persecute them as Hereticks. Whereupon the Parliament caused a great Number of them to be burnt at *Turin*. Then these *Waldenses* petition'd the King, That they might not be persecuted for their Religion, in which they and their Ancestors had lived for many hundred Years. But the King rejected their Petition, commanding them to live according to the Laws of the *Romish* Church; adding, That he did not burn the *Lutherans* through his whole Kingdom of *France*, to let them amongst the *Alps* escape.

HEREUPON the Parliament of *Turin* commanded them presently to send away all their Ministers, and receive the Priests to sing Mass. To which they answer'd: That they could not receive any such Commands, it being contrary to GOD's Word. But through GOD's Mercy, the King had other Employment elsewhere, whereby they wanted Leisure to prosecute those Servants of *Christ*, and therefore they only proceeded by the Inquisition, receiving such as the Monks condemned to the Fire.

IN the Year 1555, they encreas'd the Persecution, condemning to the Fire *Bartholomew Hector*, a Stationer, to be executed at *Turin*; who dy'd with admirable Constancy, and so edified the Spectators, that they wept and compassionated him, justifying him, and praying for him.

AT the Year's End, the King commanded the Parliament to cause them to do that by Force, which they would not be brought to by Words.

THE Protestant Princes of *Germany* hearing of this, interceded in their Behalf to *Henry II.* of *France*; who promised to have Regard to this Request; and indeed they enjoyed Peace afterwards, 'till the Peace was concluded betwixt the Kings of *France* and *Spain*; and the Duke of *Savoy* was restor'd to his Estate, which was in the Year 1559.

THE Year after, the Pope's Nuncio reproved the Duke, for that, with all his Power, he had not persecuted the *Waldenses*; and that if he did not now endeavour to reduce them to the *Romish* Church, or to root them out, his Holiness should have Cause to suspect he was a Favourer of them. Hereupon the Duke presently commanded them to go to Mass, upon the Pain of their Lives: But they not obeying him, he set upon them, by open Force; and yet at the same Time, caused them to be pursued by the Monks Inquisitors; so that a great Persecution was raised against the poor Christians. Some were taken and burnt, who shewed invincible Constancy in all their Torments.

To recite all the Outrages, Cruelties, and Villainies practised against them, would be too tedious. Many fled, and their Houses and Goods were ransacked and spoiled. One of their Ministers was apprehended, and put to a cruel Death; but he shewed such admirable Patience therein, as astonish'd his very Adversaries: Some also were taken, and sent to be Galley-Slaves: yet some, through Weakness, yielded to the Adversaries, and were more cruelly handled, than those that remained constant in the Truth.

THE

THE Monks also of *Pignerol* vex'd the Churches, near about them, grievously; some they took Prisoners, and kept them in their Abbies. Then they assembled a Company of Ruffians, sending them to spoil the Churches, and to take Prisoners, Men, Women, and Children.

THE wonderful Manner, wherein they were at length delivered, has been related at large in the preceding Part of this Work.





THE
PERSECUTION
OF THE
Waldenses,
In *CALABRIA*.

IN the Year 1370, the *Waldenses* of *Pragela* and *Dauphiny*, grew so numerous, that they sent their younger People to seek some other Country to inhabit. In their Travel, they found in *Calabria*, some waste and untill'd Lands; yet fertile, fit for Corn, Wine, Oil, and Chestnuts, and the Hills were fit for Cattle, and to furnish them with Fewel and Timber. They came therefore to the Lords of those Places, to treat with them touching their Abode there.

THE Lords received them lovingly, agreed about Rents, Penalties, &c. and so assigned to them

them certain Parts of the Country. Then they returned to their Parents, shewing how it fared with them, and so receiv'd what they pleased to bestow upon them, and many of them marrying, they return'd into *Calabria*, where they built some Towns and Cities.

THE Lords of those Countries thought themselves happy, in that they had met with such good Subjects, as peopled their waste Lands, and made them to abound with all Manner of Fruits; but principally because they were honest Men, and of good Conscience, yielding all those Duties and Honours, which they could expect from good Subjects. Only the Priests complained of them, that they made not their Children Priests and Nuns; loved not Masses; adorn'd not their Churches with Images; nor went on Pilgrimage.

HEREUPON the Lords fear'd, if the Pope should take Notice, that so near his Seat, there were People that contemn'd his Laws, they might chance to lose their Subjects: They therefore perswaded the Priests to be silent, since in other Things they shewed themselves honest Men, enrich'd the Country; yea, and the Priests themselves, by their Tythes. These Lords also stopped the Mouths of their Neighbours, who exceedingly murmured, because by no Means they could draw them into Alliance with them, and because all that they had, prosper'd exceedingly. They were wise and temperate, not given to Drinking, Dancing, Swearing, tho' living in a Country, where the Inhabitants were given to all Manner of Wickedness.

THUS they were preserv'd in Peace by their Lords, 'till the Year 1560. At which Time these *Waldenses* resolving to make a publick Profession of their

their Religion, sent for two Ministers from *Geneva*.

POPE *Pius IV.* hearing this, presently concluded their utter Ruin, giving the same in Charge to Cardinal *Alexandrino*, a violent Man, who chose two Monks Inquisitors, of his own Humour, and sent them, first to begin with the Inhabitants of *St. Xist*. There they assembled the People, gave them good Words, promising that they should receive no Violence, if they would accept such Teachers, as the Bishops should appoint; but if they refused, they would lose their Lives, Goods and Honours, and would be condemn'd for Hereticks: And further to prove them, they appointed a Mass to be sung: But the People with their Wives and Children, presently quitted their Houses, and fled into the Woods.

FROM thence the Monks went to *La Garde*, where they caused the Town Gates to be lock'd, and the People to be assembled, telling them, that they of *St. Xist*, had abjur'd their Religion, and gone to Mass, and that if they would do the like, no Man should injure them. These poor People, believing what was told them, were content to do what they would have them: But when they heard that their Friends of *St. Xist* refused to go to Mass, and were fled into the Woods, they were exceedingly grieved, and resolved with their Wives and Children, to go to their Brethren.

IN the mean Time the Monks sent two Companies of Soldiers after them of *St. Xist*, who ran after them as after wild Beasts, crying: *Kill! Kill!* and so slew Divers. Such as could get to the Top of the Mountain, called to the Soldiers, beseeching them to have Pity on them, their Wives, and Children; and that if they would not suffer them
to

to continue in their Habitations, at least they would license them to depart, either by Sea or Land, whither the LORD should be pleased to conduct them; beseeching them also, for GOD's Sake, not to force them to defend themselves.

THIS more enraged the Soldiers, who presently assaulted them. Then they so defended themselves, that by GOD's Assistance, they slew the greatest Part of the Soldiers, and put the rest to Flight. Hereupon the Inquisitors wrote to the Viceroy of *Naples*, speedily to send some Companies of Soldiers to apprehend the Hereticks of *St. Xist* and *La Garde*, whereby he should do a Work very pleasing to the Pope, and meritorious for himself.

THE Viceroy proclaimed thro' all *Naples*, that all such banished Persons as would come to fight against the Hereticks of *St. Xist*, should be pardoned all their Offences. Whereupon great Numbers resorted to him, and were conducted to the Woods, where they chased these poor People, slaying some, wounding others; the rest fled into Caves, were most of them died of Famine.

THEN were they of *La Garde* cited before the Inquisitor, and many fair Promises were made them, if they would appear; but contrary thereunto, thirty of them were apprehended, and put to the Rack.

ONE *Charlin* was racked with such Violence, that his Bowels broke out of his Belly; and all to extort from him a Confession, that in the Night, the Candles being put out, they committed Whoredom, and abominable Incest; yet would he never confess any such Wickedness.

ANOTHER was stripped stark naked, whipt with Rods of Iron, drawn thro' the Streets, and burnt with Fire-brands. One of his Sons was killed with Knives. Another was thrown down from an high Tower, because he would not kiss a Crucifix. Another was condemned to be burnt alive, and as he went to the Fire, he threw to the Ground a Crucifix, which the Executioner had fastened to his Hands; whereupon they covered him all over with Pitch, and so burnt him.

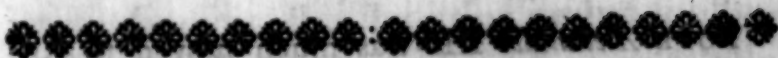
THE Inquisitor *Panza*, cut the Throats of eighty, as Butchers do their Sheep; then causing them to be divided into four Quarters, he set up Stakes for the Space of thirty Miles, and appointed a Quarter to be fastened to every Stake. Four of the principal Men of *La Garde* he caused to be hanged. Another young Man, because he would not confess himself to a Priest, was thrown from an high Tower. The Viceroy passing by him before he was dead, and hearing him implore God's Mercy, kick'd him on the Head, saying: *Is this Dog yet living? Take him and cast him to the Hogs.*

SIXTY Women were rack'd so violently, that the Cords pierced into their Arms and Legs; and being then cast into Prison, they died there: only nine of the handsomest, being delivered to the Fathers of the Inquisition, were never heard of after.

MANY others were delivered to the secular Power to be burnt; and if any interceded for them, he was presently put to the Rack as a Favourer of Hereticks.

THEN Pope *Pius IV.* sent the Marquess of *Bu-tiane*, promising that if he would wholly clear *Calabria*

labria of the *Waldenses*, he would make his Son a Cardinal. But he was put to no great Pains to do it, for the Inquisitors, and the Viceroy of *Naples*, had, by sundry Deaths, killed all the Men, Women and Children.



T.H.E



THE
PERSECUTION
OF THE
Albigenses.

THE *Albigenses* were the same with the *Waldenses*, differing only in Name, from their Habitation in the Country of *Albi*. Divers of *Valdo's* Disciples going into this Country, and amongst them one *Arnold* (from whence they were called *Arnoldists*) laboured with such good Success, that in a short Time there was scarce any found that would go to Mass.

POPE *Alexander III.* was much moved to Anger hereby, and therefore he condemn'd them for Hereticks, in the Council of *Lateran*: Yet did they so multiply, that in 1200, they possessed many great Cities; yea, they had many great Lords that took Part with them, as Earl *Remund* of *Tholouse*, *Remund*, Earl of *Foix*, the Viscount of *Beziers*,
and

and others. Pope *Innocent III.* pretended a great Desire to reclaim them by Preaching and Conference; and thereupon there was a famous Disputation at *Montreal*, wherein the Popish Doctors were shamefully baffled by *Arnold*. But the Pope's Policy was thus to rock them asleep, whilst he raised Armies against them to destroy them; the pretended Occasion whereof was this: There was one Friar *Peter* that was slain in the Dominions of the Earl of *Tholouse*; whereupon the Pope sent Preachers abroad, through all *Europe*, to assemble Men together, to take Vengeance on the Hereticks, for the innocent Blood of Fryar *Peter*, slain amongst them; promising Paradise to all that would come to this War, and bear Arms for Forty Days. This he called *The Holy War*; and gave the same Pardons and Indulgences to those, that came to this War, as to those, that went to the *Holy Land*, against the *Saracens*.

THEN he thunder'd against Earl *Remund*, charging all Archbishops and Bishops through their Diocese, to pronounce him accursed and excommunicated; and that with the Sound of a Bell, and Extinction of Candles every Sabbath and Festival Day, for murdering a good Servant of God. He also absolved all his Subjects from their Oaths of Allegiance; commanding every good Catholick to pursue his Person, and to take and possess his Land. He also wrote to all Christian Princes, to stir them up to get this Pardon, rather by fighting against these *Albigenses*, than by going against the *Turks*. Earl *Remund* hearing of all these Preparations against him, sent to the Pope, humbly beseeching him not to condemn him before he was heard; assuring him, That he was no Way guilty of the Death of Fryar *Peter*, but that he was slain by a Gentleman, who immediately fled out of his Country, otherwise he would have severely punish'd

him for it. But all was in vain; for presently came Armies of crossed Soldiers, to pour down their Vengeance on him and his Lands.

THE Earl of *Tholouse* perceiv'd, that he must either prepare for Defence, or submit; the latter he thought the safer, and therefore he went presently to the Pope's Legate at *Valence*, to whom he began to say: That he thought it strange, that so many armed Men should be brought against him, who used no other Arms for his Defence, than his own Innocency. And that concerning the Death of the Fryar, they should first have enquired the Truth of the Fact, before they thus moved Heaven and Earth against him; yea, if he had been guilty, yet there was an ordinary Course of Justice to be used against him, and not to wreak their Anger on his innocent Subjects. And therefore, Sir, (said he) *since I come voluntarily to you, armed only with the Testimony of a good Conscience; what further Use is there of these armed Pilgrims? Pray you therefore countermand these Soldiers, before they go to make any further Spoil in my Territories: For my own Person may serve for a sufficient Pledge.* The Legate answer'd: *That he had done well in coming to him, yet he could not send back the Soldiers, except he would put seven of his best Castles into his Hands, which should serve for a Hostage.*

Now the Earl, when it was too late, saw his own Folly, in putting himself into the Legate's Hands, and thereby making himself a Prisoner. But there was no Remedy. He now must take Laws from him that had him in his Power; and therefore he told him: *That both his Person and Possessions were at his Disposal, beseeching him, that his Subjects might receive no Damage by the Soldiers.*

THE Legate presently sent to put Garrisons in those seven Castles, commanding all the Consuls of every City, presently to appear before him; and when they were come, he told them: *That Earl Remund had delivered up his Castles to the Pope; and therefore they were to take Notice of it, that so they might acknowledge themselves lawfull Subjects to his Holiness, in Case the Earl should falsify his Oath to the Pope.*

THE Consuls were much astonish'd, thus to see their Lord divested of all his Possessions: But that which most afflicted them was, to see him led to St. Giles's, to be reconciled to the Church, where the Legate commanded the Earl to strip himself stark naked, all but his Linnen Drawers: Then he put a Cord about his Neck, whereby he led him nine Times about the Grave of Fryar Peter, scourging him with Rods all the while. The Earl demanded Satisfaction for so sharp a Penance, seeing he was not guilty of the Fact. The Legate answer'd: *That he must submit, if he would be reconciled to the Pope; yea, he must be thus scourged before Earls, Barons, Marquesses, Prelates, and all the People.* He made him also swear, to be obedient all his Life to the Pope and the Church of Rome, and to make irreconcilable War against the *Albigenses*.

THEN the Legate made him General of the Crossed Soldiers, for the Siege of *Beziers*. The Earl knew not what to do; for to conduct an Army to fight against the *Albigenses*, was to sin against his Conscience; and if he should fly away, it would furnish them with new Matter of Persecution, against him and his Subjects.

IN this Extremity he staid in the Army a few Days, and then went towards *Rome*, to reconcile himself to the Pope.

THEN the Army came before the City of *Beziers*, and provided all Manner of Engines for Battery, reared up Ladders for a general *Escalado*. The Earl of *Beziers* beholding this, and judging it impossible to defend the City, he went out, and cast himself down at the Legate's Feet, beseeching him not to punish the Innocent with the Guilty, which must needs be, if the Town was taken by Storm. He told him, That there were in the City, a great Number of good Catholicks, which would be subject to the same Ruin with the *Albigenses*. He desired him also to commiserate him, now in his Minority, that was a most obedient Servant to the Pope, and had been brought up in the *Romish* Church, in which he would live and die. The Legate told him, That all his Excuses prevailed nothing, and that he might do as he pleased. The Earl return'd again into the City, assembled the People, and told them: That he could obtain no Mercy from the Legate, except all the *Albigenses* would come and abjure their Religion, and promise to live according to the Laws of the Church of *Rome*. The Popish Party requested the *Albigenses* to yield to this; but the *Albigenses* answer'd: That they would not forsake their Religion, for the base Price of frail Life; that God was able, if He pleased, to defend them; but if He would be glorified by the Confession of their Faith, it would be a great Honour to them to die for his Sake: And that they had rather displease the Pope, who could but kill their Bodies, than God, who could cast both Body and Soul into Hell.

THEN

THEN the Popish Party sent their Bishop to the Legate, beseeching him not to include them in the Chastisement of the *Albigenses*; and the best Way to win the others, was by gentle Means, not by Rigour. The Legate grew into great Choler at this, swearing: *That if all the City did not acknowledge their Fault, they should all taste of one Cup, without Distinction of Religion, Sex, or Age.* And accordingly he summon'd the City immediately to yield to his Discretion; which they refusing, he caused his Engines to play, and a general Assault to be given.

IT was impossible for them, within the City, to resist so great a Violence, being assaulted by above 100,000 Pilgrims: So the Enemy enter'd, slew a great Multitude, and set the City on fire, and burnt it to Ashes. When the City was first taken, the Priests and Monks came forth of the great Church, with Banners and Crosses, singing; *Te Deum Laudamus*; but the Soldiers, who were commanded by the Legate to kill all, ran upon them, made their Heads and Arms to fly about the Streets; so that they were all cut in Pieces.

IN this City of *Beziers*, they slew 60,000 Persons, the Pope's Legate saying to the Captains and Soldiers: *Kill them all, [Catholicks and Hereticks] for the LORD knoweth who are his.*

THEN these Pilgrims were presently conducted to *Carcasson*, before the 40 Days of Service, which they had vowed to the Church of *Rome*, were expired.

THE Earl of *Beziers*, when he saw that he could obtain no Favour of the Legate, before the City was taken, left his Charge to the Bishop, and went to *Carcasson*, endeavouring to prepare and furnish.

nish it for a long Siege: But the Legate's Army followed him presently, unto which there came a new Supply of Crossed Soldiers, out of sundry Countries, so that his Army now consisted of 300,000 fighting Men.

NEAR to the City of *Carcasson*, was a Town of the same Name: The City was seated on a Hill, and fenced with a double Wall, yet the Pilgrims thought to take it at the first Sight; and therefore ran with great Violence upon the first Rampart, filling the Ditch with Faggots; but they were beaten back with such Courage, that the Ground was cover'd with their dead Bodies. The young Earl of *Beziers* won much Honour in this first Encounter, encouraging his Men, and telling them: *That it was better to die fighting, than to fall into the Hands of such merciless Enemies.* The *Albigenses* much encouraged hereby, swore to him: *That they would spend their Lives for the Preservation of the City.*

THE next Morning, the Legate commanded a general Assault to be made upon the Town of *Carcasson*, which was two Miles from the City; and the People valiantly defended themselves; but being oppressed with Multitudes, the Soldiers entered the Town, putting all to the Sword and Fire, as they had done at *Beziers*.

THEN came the King of *Arragon* to the Camp, and told the Legate: *That he understood that his Kinsman, the Earl of Beziers, was in the City; and that with his Leave, he would go to him: Not doubting, but that he should prevail with him to do his Duty to the Pope and Church.* The Legate gave him Leave, and the King approaching to the Rampart, called for the Earl, who came to him. To whom the King said: *That he desired to know*
of

of him what moved him to shut himself up in that City, against so great an Army of Pilgrims? The Earl answer'd: That it was to defend his Life, Goods, and Subjects: That he well knew that the Pope, under Pretence of Religion, resolved to destroy his Uncle Remund, and himself: That he saw the Cruelty which they had used at Beziers, even against the Priests themselves. Adding also, what they had done to the Town of Carcasson, and that they must look for no Mercy from the Legate, or his Army; and, that therefore he rather chose to die, defending himself with his Subjects, than to fall into the Hands of so inexorable an Enemy, as the Legate was: That tho' he had in his City, some that were of another Religion, yet they were such as had wronged none, and were come to his Succour, in his greatest Extremity; and for their good Service, he was resolved not to abandon them; and that his Trust was in GOD, the Defender of the Oppressed: That he would assist them, against that World of ill-advised Men, who forsok their own Houses, to burn, sack, and ransack, and kill in their Houses other Men, without Reason, Judgment, or Mercy.

THE King returning to the Legate, told him: That his Cousin was much discontented with his former Dealings against his Subjects of Beziers and Carcasson; that he believed, seeing they spared not the Romish Priests, their War was not for Religion, but a kind of Thievery; and that he would not yield himself to the Discretion of such merciless Men.

THE Legate, after some Debate, told the King: That for his Sake he would receive the Earl of Beziers to Mercy; and that with him, Twelve more might come out with Bag and Baggage: But for the Rest, he would have them wholly at his Discretion; and, that then they might hope well of his Mercy, he being the Pope's Legate.

THE King much distasted this Proposition, yet reported it to the Earl of *Beziers*, who return'd Answer: *That he would not come forth upon such unreasonable and unjust Propositions, but would defend himself and his Subjects, as GOD should enable him.*

THEN the Legate caused all his Engines to play, commanding, *That they should take the City by Storm*; but he was little pleased, when he saw the Loss of a great Number of his Pilgrims: For they in the City threw down Stones, Fire, Pitch, Brimstone, and boiling Water, wherewith they so galled the Assailants, That the Earth was cover'd, and the Ditches filled with dead Bodies, which caused a noisome Stink both in the City and Camp.

THIS Overthrow, caused divers of the Crossed Soldiers, having accomplished their forty Days Service, and thereby gained Paradise, to refuse to conquer more after so fair a Purchase; and therefore they return'd Home.

THE Legate being much troubled to see his Army so decreased, thought of this Stratagem. He sent for a Gentleman, telling him: That he might do a Piece of Service, whereby he might not only merit Heaven, but gain a great Reward here; which was, by going to the Earl of *Beziers*, and endeavouring to put him into great Fears, and then to persuade him to have Recourse to the Legate's Mercy; and withall, that he should persuade him, with great Oaths and Execrations, (whereof he could absolve him at his Pleasure) to come with him to the Legate, with Assurance, That he should be dismissed safe and sound.

THIS Gentleman play'd his Part so well, that he brought the young Earl with him. The Legate

gate presently told him, *That he was now his Prisoner 'till Carcasson was taken; and 'till his Subjects had better learned their Duty.* The Earl, astonish'd hereat, cried out: *That he was betrayed, and that Faith was violated with him.* But this prevailed nothing; for he was presently committed to the Guard and Custody of the Duke of Burgundy.

THE Inhabitants of *Carcasson* understanding this, brake forth into Tears, and were so astonish'd, that they now thought of nothing, but how, by Flight, to escape the Danger; but that seemed impossible, being environ'd with such an Army. At last one told them, *That he heard some old Men say, that there was a certain Vault under Ground, great and large, which went to the Castle of Came-ret, three Leagues off.* Then were all the Citizens employed to search for this Vault; and having at last found it, they began their Flight in the Evening, with their Wives and Children, carrying with them only some Victuals for a few Days. This Departure was accompanied with much Sorrow, thus to leave all their worldly Enjoyments. The next Morning they came to the Castle, and from thence dispersed themselves, some to *Arragon*, others to *Catalonia*, and others to *Tbolouse*, whither it pleased GOD to conduct them.

IN the Morning the Pilgrims were strangely astonish'd, hearing no Noise, nor seeing any Man stirring in the City, yet they approach'd the Walls with much Fear, lest it should be a Stratagem to endanger them; but finding no Opposition, they mounted the Walls, crying out, *That the Albigenes were fled.* And thus was the City, with all the Spoils taken, and the Earl of *Beziers* committed to Prison, in one of the strongest Towers of *Carcasson*.

THEN

THEN the Legate called all the Prelates, and great Lords of his Army together, telling them: *That though it was requisite that there should always be a Legate in the Army, yet it was likewise necessary that there should be a Secular General, wise and valiant, to command in all their Affairs.* This Charge was first proffer'd to the Duke of *Burgundy*, then to the Earl of *Ennevers*, and to the Earl of *St. Paul*; but they all refused it. Lastly, it was proffer'd to Earl *Simon* of *Montfort*, who, after some Excuses, accepted of it.

THE Earl being made General, settled himself at *Carcaffon*, with 4000 Pilgrims, all the Remains of that huge Army.

AFTER this, Earl *Remund*, of *Tholouse*, went to the *French King*, for his Letters of Commendation to the Pope, to be by him fully cleared from the Death of Fryar *Peter*; and the Pope thereupon received him courteously, gave him full Absolution, and declared him sufficiently justified.

SHORTLY after, the Earl of *Beziers* died in Prison, and Earl *Simon* was put into Possession of his Lands; whereupon, all that border'd upon him, began to fear him; for he gave it out, *That the Spring following he would have a great Army of Pilgrims, wherewith he would chastise those that had not acknowledged his Authority, given him by the Church.* Upon this Occasion, *Castris* sent unto him the Keys of their City; the Castle of *Pinies* yielded to him; and so did all round about *Carcaffon*. But the King of *Arragon* secretly encouraged the Gentlemen of the Viscounty of *Beziers*, telling them: *That his Pilgrims would be uncertain, and would not stay long with him; and that, if in the mean Time, they would keep themselves in their Garrisons,*
when

when he was weak, by the Departure of his Pilgrims, they might set upon him, and reduce him to Reason.

THESE Messages gave such Encouragement to the Gentry, that Earl *Simon* being gone to *Montpelier*, they took Arms to shake off his Yoke, besieging some of his Soldiers in a Tower near *Carcasson*. The Earl hearing of it, presently returned to succour them, but the Tower was taken before he came: Which Affront brought him into some Contempt. Then Captain *Boucard*, belonging to Earl *Simon*, attempted to surprize the strong Castle of *Caberet*, making his Approach thereto as secretly as he could. Capt. *Roger* commanding therein for Earl *Remund*, was come forth with eighty Horse to Forrage. *Boucard*, on a Sudden, charged him: But *Roger* doubled the Charge, in so furious a Manner, that he overcame *Boucard's* Party, and brought him Prisoner, into that Castle that he came to surprize.

GERRARD, of *Pepios*, took Part with the *Albigenses*, so that the War grew hot: And all the Men that Earl *Simon* took, he caused a great Fire to be made, and cast them into it; neither did his Men escape Scot-free, when they fell into their Enemies Hands.

THE City of *Carcasson* was hereupon stricken with great Fear, having little Hope to defend themselves, but by Flight, being environed on all Sides by their Enemies. About this Time, Earl *Simon* wrote to all the Prelates throughout *Europe*, that if in the Spring following, they did not send him good Store of Pilgrims, he could hold out no longer against his Enemies; having, since the last Departure of his Pilgrims, lost above forty Towns and Castles: And whilst he waited for these new Succours, he surprized the Castle of *Bero*, where
he

he pulled out the Eyes of above one Hundred *Albigenses*, and cut off their Noses, leaving only one with one Eye to guide the rest to *Cabaret*.

IN the Year 1210, Earl *Simon*, being shut up in *Carcasson*, for want of Soldiers, heard that his Wife was coming from *France*, with many Pilgrims; whereupon, he went out to meet her. These Pilgrims he employ'd against the Castle of *Menerbe*, which at last was yielded up to him for want of Water. This Castle was defended by *Remund*. Lord of *Termes*, and was situated in *Narbonne*: One Argument which Earl *Simon* used, to stir up his Soldiers to fight manfully against it, was: *For that* (said he) *there hath been no Mass sung in it, since the Year 1180, which is now thirty Years.*

UPON the Surrender of the Castle, they labour'd to draw this noble Lord to recant his Religion, and turn Papist; but finding him immoveable, they shut him up in a close Prison, where shortly after he died. They also took his Wife, Sister, and Daughter, who was a Maid, and other Noblewomen, whom they labour'd to withdraw from the Truth, both by Flattery and Frowns, by fair Speeches and Threats; but when they saw that nothing would prevail, they made a huge Fire, and casting them into the same, burnt them. After his taking the Castle, he caus'd a Fryar to preach to the People, and to exhort them to acknowledge the Pope and Church of *Rome*: But they not staying 'till he had done, cry'd out: *We will not forsake our Faith; you labour but in vain; for neither Life nor Death shall make us abandon our Belief.* Then the Earl and Legate caus'd a great Fire to be made, and cast into it 180 Men and Women, who went in with Joy, giving God Thanks, for that He was pleas'd so to honour them,

them, as to grant them to die for his Name's Sake. They also told Earl *Simon*: *That he would one Day pay dear for his Cruelties.* All that saw their Valour and Constancy were much amazed.

AFTER this, the Earl besieged the Castle of *Termes*, which also at last was taken, for Want of Water; yet they within the Castle, when they perceiv'd that they could hold out no longer, quitted the Place by Night, and passed away undiscover'd. The Castle *de la Vaur*, was also besieged, in which there were many godly People. Many Pilgrims came thither to the Legate, from all Countries; and, amongst others, 6000 *Germans*; of whose coming the Earl of *Foix* hearing, he laid an Ambush for them, overthrew and slew them all, not one escaping, but an Earl that carry'd the News to Earl *Simon*. After six Months Siege, the Castle of *Vaur* was taken by Assault, where all the Soldiers were put to the Sword, save 80 Gentlemen, whom Earl *Simon* caus'd to be hang'd; and the Lord *Aimeri*, on a Gibbet higher than all the rest: The Lady, his Sister, call'd *Girauda*, was cast into a Ditch, and there cover'd with Stones.

As for the rest of the People, a very great Fire was made, and they were put to their Choice, *Whether they would forsake their Opinions, or perish by the Flames?* There were scarce any of them found, that would do the first; but exhorting one another, they were cast into the Fire, where joyfully they resigned up their Spirits unto GOD.

AFTER the Return of Earl *Remund* from the Pope, the Legate still thought to entrap him, but the Earl would not come again within his Reach. Then the Legate sent the Bishop of *Tholouse* to him, who, pretending great Love and Friendship; by his Subtilty, at last, prevail'd with him, to

proffer his strong Castle of *Narbonne* to them, to lodge in, as they pass'd that Way. But as soon as the Legate and his Company were enter'd, they seized upon it, and put a Garrison into it; which was a continual Vexation to all his Subjects.

THE Legate still resolv'd upon the utter Extirpation of Earl *Remund*, and all his House, as the Head of the *Albigenses*; but presently after, this Legate dying, Earl *Simon* was frustrated of this Hope.

ABOUT this Time, the *English*, who now possess'd *Guienne*, which borders upon the Earldom of *Tholouse*, began to help the *Albigenses*, being stirr'd up thereto by *Reynard Lollard*, a godly and learned Man; who by his powerful Preaching, converted many to the Truth, and defended the Faith of the *Albigenses*: For which, they were eagerly pursued, and constantly suffer'd Martyrdom. And this they did the rather, not only for their Neighbourhood's Sake, but because this *Remund*, Earl of *Tholouse*, whom they so cruelly whipped, and had now excommunicated, was Brother-in-Law to King *John*: For his former Wife was *Joan*, sometime Queen of *Sicily*; which *Joan*, was King *John's* Sister, and bore to the Earl of *Tholouse*, *Remund*, who succeeded his Father, both in the Earldom, and in his Trouble. *John le Mayer*, much commendeth this *Lollard*, saying: That he foretold many Things by Divine Revelation, which (says he) came to pass in my Time; and therefore he puts him into the Rank of Holy Prophets. And for his Learning, it is evident by his Comment upon the *Revelation*, where he set forth many Things that are spoken of the *Roman Antichrist*. This worthy Man was afterwards apprehended in *Germany*; and being deliver'd to the Secular Power, was burnt at *Colen*.

IN the Year 1211, a new Legate, called *Theodosius*, was appointed to succeed; who excommunicated Earl *Remund*. The Bishop of *Tholouse*, thereupon sent the Earl Word: *That he must depart out of the City; for, that he could not say Mass whilst an excommunicated Person was in the City.* The Earl return'd this Answer: *That he (the Bishop) should presently depart out of his Territories, and that upon Pain of his Life.* Accordingly the Bishop departed, and took with him the Canons of the Cathedral Church, with the Cross, Banner, and Host, and went all of them bare-footed, in Procession. Coming thus to the Legate's Army, they were received as persecuted Martyrs, with the Tears of the Pilgrims, and general Applause of all.

HEREUPON the Legate thought that he had sufficient Cause to prosecute Earl *Remund*, as a relapsed and impenitent Man. But first he sought by Craft to get him into his Power, and with fair, flattering Letters, he at last drew him once again to *Arles*: The Earl had requested the King of *Arragon* to meet him there. When they were both come, the Legate commanded them, upon Pain of his high Indignation, that they should not depart, but with his Leave. Whilst they were there, the Earl was privately shew'd, by a Friend, the Articles of the Legate, to which he would inforce him to subscribe; which were these:

I. THAT the Earl of *Tholouse* shall presently dismiss all his Men at Arms.

II. THAT he shall be obedient to the Church; and repair all the Costs and Damages which the Church hath been at.

III. THAT *he shall expell out of his Territories, all the Hereticks and their Allies.*

IV. THAT *he shall deliver into the Hands of the Legate, and of Earl Simon, all those Persons that shall be named unto him.*

V. THAT *all his Castles of Defence shall be razed to the Ground.*

VI. THAT *no Gentlemen of his shall live in any City or Castle, but in Country Houses, or Villages only.*

VII. THAT *every Master of a Family shall pay yearly four Tholousian Pence to the Legate.*

VIII. THAT *when Earl Simon shall pass thro' his Countries, he shall bear their Charges.*

IX. THAT *after his Performance of these Things, he shall go into the Holy Land, to fight against the Turk, and never return again into his own Country, but by the Leave of the Pope, or his Legate.*

REMUND having read these Articles, shew'd them to the King, who advis'd him presently to mount on Horseback, lest seizing upon him, they might the better become Masters of all his Estate, which accordingly he did. The Legate was much troubled that he had thus lost his Prey, and despairing to do any more by Subtilty, he resolv'd to set upon him by Force; and thereupon he besieg'd the Castle of *Montferrand*, where *Baldwin*, the Brother of the Earl of *Tholouse*, was Governor. *Baldwin*, pretending Inability to defend the Place, yielded it up, and abjuring his Opinions, turned Papist.

THE Earl of *Tholouse* seeing himself thus betray'd by his Brother, lamented exceedingly; but a greater Mischief soon after befell him: For the Legate, and Earl *Simon*, won from him, by their Subtilty, the King of *Arragon*, his only Prop under GOD: And by this Means, they agreed, That the King of *Arragon's* Daughter, should be married to Earl *Simon's* eldest Son; in Consideration whereof, the King of *Arragon* invested *Simon* in the Earldom of *Beziers*; and now they intended jointly to besiege *Tholouse*. For which End, the Bp. of *Tholouse* was sent to levy Soldiers in *France*, and at his Return, hasted to *Tholouse*: Which Earl *Remund* hearing of, sallied out of the City with 500 Horse, and some Foot, and march'd to the Bridge, which goes over the River *Garonne*, not far from *Tholouse*, hoping either to gain it, or to break it down: But being overpower'd by Multitudes, he was forc'd to make a Retreat, and the Enemy pursu'd him to the very Gates of *Tholouse*. Earl *Remund* seeing their Insolence, sallied out again with a greater Strength, and charg'd them so gallantly, that he beat them back to the Bridge, which being but narrow, he slew almost all of them there; and took *Aimery*, the Son of Earl *Simon*, Prisoner. Earl *Simon* hearing of this Loss, hasten'd with all his Army to the City, and gave a furious Assault to it; but the Ditches were soon filled with the dead Bodies of the Enemy, beaten from off their Scaling-Ladders; and the Earl himself was beat from off his Horse. In the Midst of this Assault, came the Earl of *Champaign*, soon enough to be well beaten for his Welcome. Earl *Simon*, finding such stout Resistance from the Citizens, caus'd his Pilgrims to spoil the Orchards, Gardens, and Vineyards about the City, which being perceiv'd, the President of *Argeves* issued out of the City suddenly, and slew a great Number of

the Pilgrims; and on another Part, the Earl of *Foix* slew as many as he could meet with.

THE Earl of *Bar* seeing the Disorder of the Popish Army, cry'd out; a *Bar!* a *Bar!* but the Citizens of *Tholouse* charg'd him so bravely, that being discomfited, he was fain to fly amongst the rest. After this Victory, Earl *Remund* returning to *Tholouse*, caus'd publick Thanks to be return'd unto GOD, for the same.

EARL *Simon* after this, led his Army into the Country of the Earl of *Foix*, who was now sick, where he took some Towns: The Legate, with another Part of the Army, went to *Roquemaure*, and in his Way, took the Tower of *Cassas*, caus'd above 100 Men that were found therein to be burnt alive, and levell'd the Tower to the Earth.

EARL *Remund*, being much afflicted for the Loss of his antient Friend the King of *Arragon*, studied how he might regain him, and for that End propounded a Match between his only Son, and the King of *Arragon's* Daughter, which Motion the King readily embrac'd; and so their Amity was reviv'd.

NOT long after, the King of *Arragon* sent a Letter of Defiance to Earl *Simon*, who sent the same all over Christendom, to stir up Pilgrims to assist him for the Destruction of the King, who, (as he said) was now become the Captain of the *Albigenses*. And in the mean Time the Pope's Legate, raising an Army in *France*, went speedily into the Earldom of *Foix*, and took some Towns, putting all to the Sword, without Distinction of Sex or Age; and taking also St. *Anthony's*, he caus'd thirty of the principal Men to be hang'd, after he had granted them their Lives.

IN the Year 1213, *Peter King*, of *Arragon*, with a great Army besieg'd *Muret*, a strong Town, situate upon the River *Garronne*, near *Tholouse*: There were in his Army the Earls of *Tholouse*, *Comminges*, and *Foix*. The Night following the Popish Bishops sent two Fryars to him, desiring him to take Pity on the Church, and not to undertake the Defence of the *Hereticks*; but they labour'd in vain, for the King would not desert them; whereupon they prepar'd the next Day to give him Battle, and whilst *Simon Montfort* was encouraging his Soldiers, the Bishop of *Tholouse* carry'd a Crucifix in his Hand, whereupon the Captains alighting, ador'd it. Then the Bishop of *Comminges*, getting upon an high Place, took the Cross in his Hand, and blessed the Army, promising Forgiveness of all Sins, to all that died in that Quarrel. Hereupon *Simon* divided his Army into three *Battalia's*, and so joining Battle, they fought gallantly on both Sides, 'till the King of *Arragon* was slain, and some Thousands of his Army. The *Albigenses* attributed this Loss to God's Judgment upon the human Confidence of the King, who trusted too much in his great Numbers, and was feasting, whilst his Enemies were plotting.

AFTER this Victory, the Pope's Agents sent their Letters into divers Countries, for a new Supply of Pilgrims, utterly to root out the *Hereticks*.

EARL *Simon* was now so puffed up, that he summon'd the Earls of *Tholouse*, *Foix*, *Comminges*, and the Prince of *Bern*, to deliver to him the Keys of those Cities and Castles which they possessed. They return'd no Answer, but each of them betook himself to his own Territories, to provide the best they could for their Affairs.

EARL

the Pilgrims; and on another Part, the Earl of *Foix* slew as many as he could meet with.

THE Earl of *Bar* seeing the Disorder of the Popish Army, cry'd out; a *Bar!* a *Bar!* but the Citizens of *Tholouse* charg'd him so bravely, that being discomfited, he was fain to fly amongst the rest. After this Victory, Earl *Remund* returning to *Tholouse*, caus'd publick Thanks to be return'd unto GOD, for the same.

EARL *Simon* after this, led his Army into the Country of the Earl of *Foix*, who was now sick, where he took some Towns: The Legate, with another Part of the Army, went to *Roquemaure*, and in his Way, took the Tower of *Cassas*, caus'd above 100 Men that were found therein to be burnt alive, and levell'd the Tower to the Earth.

EARL *Remund*, being much afflicted for the Loss of his antient Friend the King of *Arragon*, studied how he might regain him, and for that End propounded a Match between his only Son, and the King of *Arragon's* Daughter, which Motion the King readily embrac'd; and so their Amity was reviv'd.

NOT long after, the King of *Arragon* sent a Letter of Defiance to Earl *Simon*, who sent the same all over Christendom, to stir up Pilgrims to assist him for the Destruction of the King, who, (as he said) was now become the Captain of the *Albigenses*. And in the mean Time the Pope's Legate, raising an Army in *France*, went speedily into the Earldom of *Foix*, and took some Towns, putting all to the Sword, without Distinction of Sex or Age; and taking also St. *Anthony's*, he caus'd thirty of the principal Men to be hang'd, after he had granted them their Lives.

IN the Year 1213, *Peter King*, of *Arragon*, with a great Army besieg'd *Muret*, a strong Town, situate upon the River *Garronne*, near *Tholouse*: There were in his Army the Earls of *Tholouse*, *Comminges*, and *Foix*. The Night following the Popish Bishops sent two Fryars to him, desiring him to take Pity on the Church, and not to undertake the Defence of the *Hereticks*; but they labour'd in vain, for the King would not desert them; whereupon they prepar'd the next Day to give him Battle, and whilst *Simon Montfort* was encouraging his Soldiers, the Bishop of *Tholouse* carry'd a Crucifix in his Hand, whereupon the Captains alighting, ador'd it. Then the Bishop of *Comminges*, getting upon an high Place, took the Cross in his Hand, and blessed the Army, promising Forgiveness of all Sins, to all that died in that Quarrel. Hereupon *Simon* divided his Army into three *Battalia's*, and so joining Battle, they fought gallantly on both Sides, 'till the King of *Arragon* was slain, and some Thousands of his Army. The *Albigenses* attributed this Loss to God's Judgment upon the human Confidence of the King, who trusted too much in his great Numbers, and was feasting, whilst his Enemies were plotting.

AFTER this Victory, the Pope's Agents sent their Letters into divers Countries, for a new Supply of Pilgrims, utterly to root out the *Hereticks*.

EARL *Simon* was now so puffed up, that he summon'd the Earls of *Tholouse*, *Foix*, *Comminges*, and the Prince of *Bern*, to deliver to him the Keys of those Cities and Castles which they possessed. They return'd no Answer, but each of them betook himself to his own Territories, to provide the best they could for their Affairs.

EARL

EARL *Remund* retir'd to *Montallon*, and wrote to them at *Tholouse*, that understanding the Bishop of *Arras* was coming with an Army against them, and that he was altogether disabled to defend their City, he advis'd them, that they would make the best Terms they could. In the Interim, the Earls of *Foix*, *Comminges*, and the Prince of *Bern* did what they could to infest the Enemy's Armies.

UPON the former Advice, the Citizens of *Tholouse* sent some Deputies to Earl *Simon*, to proffer him the Keys of their City, whom he receiv'd honourably, and presently wrote to *Lewis*, Son of King *Philip*, that the City of *Tholouse* was offer'd to him, but his Desire was, That he should come and have the Honour of taking it: The Prince went thither immediately, and had *Tholouse* deliver'd to him. Yet the Legate resolv'd that the Pillage of it should be given to his Pilgrims, and the City dismantled, which was presently executed, though contrary to the Promise made to the Citizens.

THEN Earl *Simon* besieg'd the Castle of *Foix*, but having lain ten Days before it, he found to his Cost, that the Place was not to be won by him: For whereas Earl *Simon's* Brother quarter'd at *Varilles*, the Earl of *Foix* dislodged him, and slew him with his Launce, putting all his Men to Flight. News hereof being brought to Earl *Simon*, he swore that he would drive the Earl of *Foix* behind the *Pyrenæan* Mountains. But presently he had Intelligence, That an Army of the *Arrogonois*, and *Catalunians* were come into the Earldom of *Beziers*, threatening to be reveng'd on him for the Death of their good King; whereupon he rais'd his Siege in Haste, and march'd thitherwards. But the Earl of *Foix*, who knew the Passages better than he, lay in Ambush for him in a Place fit for

for his Turn, and suddenly setting upon his Pilgrims, slew a great Number of them; only Earl *Simon*, with a Few others, escaped; and went to *Carcaſſon*; but before he came thither, the *Arragonois* were gone, else they might easily have discomfited him. Yet shortly after they return'd again, and Earl *Simon* was soundly beaten by them, so that he was forc'd to shut himself up in *Carcaſſon*, 'till he had a new Supply of Pilgrims.

SHORTLY after came *Remund*, Son of Earl *Remund* out of *England*, (where he had been bred under his Uncle King *John*) with an Army, and quickly made himself Master of the City of *Beaucaire*, and almost famish'd them that held the Castle, so that they yielded it to depart with their Baggage. There Earl *Simon* lost 100 Gentlemen, that he had plac'd in Ambush near the City, whom young *Remund* in a Sally cut to Pieces.

IN the Year 1214, the Legate call'd a Council at *Montpelier*, for renewing of the Army of the Church, and to confirm the Authority of Earl *Simon*; where they declar'd him to be Prince of all the Countries conquer'd from the *Albigenses*; which Title was confirm'd to him by the Pope also; who stiled him, *The active and dextrous Soldier of Jesus Christ, and the invincible Defender of the Catholick Faith*. But whilst Earl *Simon* was in the Council receiving this new Honour, a Rumour was heard in the City, and a Messenger brought Word, That the People, hearing Earl *Simon* was there, betook themselves to their Arms, purposing to kill him; whereupon he stole away by the Walls of the City on Foot, without any Company, and so escaped; so that in one Hour he saw himself honour'd as a God, and flying, disguis'd, for Fear of the Multitude.

IN 1215, there was a Council held by the Pope at *Lateran*, where they gave the Inquisitors such Power against the Gospellers, that poor People were every where horribly tortur'd, that were but suspected of Heresy. Friar *Conrade*, of *Marpurg*, the Pope's Inquisitor, if he but suspected any of Heresy, us'd to try them by the Judgment of red hot Irons, and such as were burn'd by the Irons, he deliver'd as Hereticks, to the Secular Power, to be burnt in the Flames; whereupon most of those that were accused, were by him condemn'd to be burnt, few escaping the hot Irons: Insomuch, as Noble, Ignoble, Clerks, Monks, Nuns, Burgeffies, Citizens and Countrymen, were, under the Name of Heresy (by too head-long a Sentence of the Inquisitor on the same Day whereon they were accused) cast into the Flames, no Appeal or Defence doing them any good.

By the same Council, Earl *Simon* had the foremention'd Lands of the *Albigenses* confirm'd to him, and thereupon he hasten'd to the King of *France*, to receive Investiture.

WHEN he had received it, being attended with 100 Bishops, and an exceeding great Army of Pilgrims, he hasten'd to make himself Lord of all those Countries, which the Pope gave him. So that all Men trembled at his Approach, and with this great Army he took divers Places, using great Cruelty, putting Men, Women, and Children to the Sword. Then he march'd to *Tholouse*, purposing to pillage and raze it to the Ground: But by the Way, his Wife sent him Word, That he must speedily come to her Relief, being besieged in the Castle of *Narbonnes*, by the Earl of *Tholouse*. By this Time many of his Pilgrims were return'd to *France*.

EARL

EARL Simon hastening to the Relief of his Wife, and being come before *Tholouse*, the People, by frequent Sallies, made that Place too hot for his Abode. The Legate, perceiving that he was much astonish'd at it, said to him: *Fear nothing, we shall quickly recover the City, and then we will destroy all the Inhabitants; and if any of our Pilgrims are slain in Fight, they shall, as Martyrs, immediately pass to Paradise.* Hereupon, one of Earl Simon's great Captains said; *Monsieur Cardinal, you talk with great Assurance, but if the Earl believe you, it will be little for his Profit; for you, and other Prelates, have been the Causers of all this Evil, and will be of more, if he believe you.* Then it was resolv'd, That the City should be besieg'd on the Side of *Gascoign*; but the Citizens made such a blunt Sally, that they put their Enemies to flight; and presently the Earl of *Foix* coming with new Supplies, fell upon Earl Simon, chased him to the River *Garonne*, where many of his Pilgrims were drown'd, and the Earl, with his Horle, fell into the River, and narrowly escap'd.

THE Earl *Remund* caused publick Thanksgiving to be given to GOD, for this happy Victory.

IN the Year 1218, There came to Earl Simon 100,000 Pilgrims, and he was resolv'd that they should earn their Pardons, knowing that at the End of forty Days they would vanish. Whereupon the next Morning they were order'd to give a general Assault to *Tholouse*: But Earl *Remund* perceiving in the Night, that they were secure, because of their great Multitude, he sallied out upon them, and that with such good Success, that ere Morning, all the Field was cover'd with their dead Bodies, and the Earl with his Men being weary with Killing, return'd into the City to give Thanks unto GOD, for his Assistance.

THEN

THEN *Earl Simon* enter'd into the Castle of *Narbonne*, to see if he could discern any Way to enter into the City; but finding none, it much troubled him: whereupon two Lords gave him Counsel to come to some honourable Agreement. But the Cardinal *Bertrand* told him, There was no Need for him so to do: To whom one of them answer'd: *Monsieur Cardinal*, pray you, where find you, that you should take from *Earl Remund*, and his Son, that which belongs unto them? If I had known as much as I know now, I had never taken upon me this Business.

AFTER nine Months Siege, the Citizens of *Tbolouse* made another Sally, killing as many Soldiers as they encounter'd with; and *Earl Simon* coming in to the Relief of his Men, had his Horse shot in the Head with an Arrow, which caus'd him to run away with him; which one of the *Albigenses* seeing, he shot him through his Thigh with his Cross-bow. *Simon*, perceiving he lost much Blood, was labouring to get out of the Throng, but just at that Present, a Woman discharging an Engine from the Walls of *Tbolouse*, a Stone parted his Head from his Shoulders; and thus by God's just Judgment, he that had been the Deflourer and Murtherer of many Women, was himself slain by a Woman.

UPON his Death, the Legate and all the Bishops fled, never staying 'till they came to *Carcaffon*; the Pilgrims disbanded and return'd to their Homes; and *Earl Remund* caus'd a publick Thanksgiving to be return'd to Almighty God, for this so signal a Deliverance.

THE Legate *Bertrand* being weary of these Wars, wrote to Pope *Honorius III.* desiring to be recalled, because of his Age; yet withall, he signified

nified a Necessity of continuing these Wars. Otherwise (saith he) not only the Lands of the *Albigenses* will be lost, but the Church of *Rome* itself will be ruined, the Doctrine of the *Albigenses* shaking the Authority of the Popes themselves: And (saith he) this War hath cost us very dear; for within less than fifteen Years, there hath died 300,000 Crossed Soldiers; and therefore all will be lost, except those Hereticks be utterly destroy'd.

IN the Year 1220, Earl *Guido*, of *Montfort*, Son and Heir to Earl *Simon*, went against the *Albigenses*, but was soon after slain by the Earl of Saint *Giles*, as he besieged a Castle in *Tbolouse*. Then his Brother *Almerick* besieged the same Castle, and swore, That he would never depart from it 'till he had taken it: But after awhile, his hoped-for Aids failing him, he was forc'd to leave the Siege, and depart. After whose Departure, the *Albigenses* recover'd many Places.

IN the Year 1221, the young Emperor *Frederick*, by the Instigation of the Pope, publish'd a bloody Edict against the Gospellers within his Dominions, wherein he declared them publick Enemies; commanding their Goods to be confiscated, without Redemption, and their Sons to be disinherited: As also, That all of them that were apprehended, should be kept in Prison, 'till they were killed with an abominable Death. The like Punishment he commanded to be inflicted on all such as should aid, or assist them. He also took away all Benefit of Appeal, from such as were Receivers, or Favourers of them. And further, he commanded that their Houses, and the Houses of such as should receive, defend, or favour them, either where they have taught, or where they have laid on Hands, should be pluck'd down, and never more repaired.

THE same Year some of these *Albigenses* going into *Bosnia* and *Dalmatia*, drew many of the People to embrace their Faith; whereupon the Bishop of *Cologne* was sent thither by Pope *Honorius*, as his Legate, and requir'd to force them to return to the *Catholick Faith*; but he being weary of the Work, left it to the *Friars Predicant*. The King assisting them, they burnt with Fires those, that were obstinate in their Heresies.

IN 1223, *Bartholomew*, the Bishop of the *Albigenses* of *Tholouse*, ordain'd a Bishop for *Bulgary*, *Croatia*, and *Dalmatia*, where their Faith spread so fast, that Bishops themselves were drawn to be of their Opinion. Whereupon the Pope's Legate wrote to the Archbishop of *Roan*, to meet with other Bishops at a Council at *Sens*, against the said *Bartholomew*.

IN 1226, the Legate commanded all that were able to bear Arms, to sign themselves with the Sign of the Cross, against the Earl of *Tholouse*, and his People. At his Preaching, a great Multitude of Prelates, and Laymen took upon them the Sign of the Cross, yet more for Fear of the King of *France*, than induced by the Justness of the Cause. But the King of *France* being signed with the Cross, would not take upon him the Expedition, unless the Pope would forbid the King of *England* to move War against him; which the Pope accordingly did. King *Henry III.* of *England*, upon Receipt of the Pope's Letters, assembled his Nobles to consult with them, what he should do: At which Time there was one *Mr. William Picrpont*, who constantly affirmed before the King: *That if the King of France took upon him this Expedition, he should either never return alive, or else should meet with as great Confusion as might be, both of his Person, Estate, and Followers.*

THE King of *France*, having settled his Affairs at Home, he, together with the Legate, appointed a Day for the Crossed Soldiers to come to a Rendezvous, with their Horses and Arms at *Lyons*, from whence at the Time appointed he began his Expedition, with an huge Army, which was accounted *Invincible*. In the Army there were reckoned 50,000 Knights, and Men at Arms on Horse-back, besides an innumerable Company of Footmen. Then the Legate publickly excommunicated the Earl of *Tholouse*, putting all his Favourers and Lands under *Interdict*.

THE King, with his glittering and terrible Arms, on *Whitson-Eve*, came to *Avignon*, the first City in *Tholouse*, purposing to destroy the whole Land of the Earl, from one End to the other, and utterly to root out the Inhabitants thereof; yet very cunningly the King and the Legate sent to the Citizens, only desiring Passage through the City. The Citizens consulting together, return'd Answer: That they suspected Fraud, neither would they admit them into the City; whereupon the King, in a great Rage, swore, That he would not depart thence 'till he had taken it.

THE Citizens valiantly defended themselves, so that the Siege lasted long. The Earl of *Tholouse*, before the Coming of the *French Army*, had withdrawn all Kind of Victuals, together with the Women, Children, and Cattle into Places of Safety: Hereupon the King's Army fell into great Wants, so that Multitudes perish'd by Famine. Their Horses and Beasts were also starved; for the Earl had caused all the Meadows in the whole Country to be ploughed up, so that they had no Fodder, but what was brought out of *France*: And their Wants daily encreasing, many Legions went out of the King's Camp to seek for Food; but the Earl

of *Tholouse*, with a flying Army, lay in Ambush many Times for them, and cut off Multitudes of them. They also that lay in the Siege before the City, were miserably wasted by Darts, and Stones shot in Engines from the Walls by the Citizens, and a general Famine overspread all. The King and Legate were confounded, to think what Reproach it would be to them, and to the Church of *Rome*, that so gallant, and numerous an Army, should undertake such an Expedition, and be able to effect nothing. Then the chief Princes and Captains, being weary of the long Siege, solicited that a general Storm might be given, hoping by their Multitudes to oppress the Citizens; which being resolv'd upon, such a Multitude of arm'd Men throng'd upon the Bridge, that goes over the River *Rhone*, that the Bridge breaking under them, 3000 of them were drown'd.

PRESENTLY after, as the *French* were one Day at Dinner, the Citizens discovering their Carelessness, sally'd forth, and violently setting upon them, slew 10,000, without any Loss to themselves. The King of *France* commanded the dead Bodies to be thrown into the River, affording them no other Burial.

THEN he remov'd his Siege to a farther Distance, and to prevent the like Attempts, caused a Ditch to be cast up between the City and his Camp; and the Legate, with his Prelates, not knowing how otherwise to revenge themselves, *Anathematized* the Earl of *Tholouse*, and all his Subjects: But, *whom they cursed, the LORD blessed*: For shortly after, he sent a very great Plague in the *French* Camp, so that King *Lewis*, to escape the same, retired himself into the neighbouring Abbey of *Montpensier*, where he resolved to remain 'till the City should be taken: Unto whom came *Henry*,
Earl

Earl of *Champaign*, desiring to be dismissed, having now serv'd forty Days; but the King deny'd his Request. To whom the Earl said: *That having performed what he enjoined, he neither might nor would be staid any longer.* The King, being very angry hereat, swore, That if he departed, he would waste his whole Land, with Fire and Sword; yet the Earl, according to his former Resolution, went his Ways; and shortly after the LORD struck the King with Sicknes, whereof he died. The Legate, and great Captains conceal'd his Death, for a Month together; and in the *Interim* sent Messengers labouring to draw the Citizens to a Composition; and Commissioners being sent to the Camp, the Legate perswaded them to resign up their City to him, upon Promise, that they should enjoy their Lives, Estates, and Liberties, in a better Manner than they had formerly: But they answer'd, That they would not live under the Power of the *Frenchmen*, whose Pride and Insolence they had often try'd.

AFTER a long Parley, the Legate desired, that himself and the Prelates might be admitted into the City, swearing with a great Oath, that he had continued the Siege so long, only that he might seek the Salvation of their Souls. The Citizens giving Credit to his Promise, not suspecting his Treachery, after mutual Oaths given on either Side, admitted him with the Prelates and their Followers, into the City: But contrary to their Oaths, the *Frenchmen* follow'd, violently rushing into the City, when the Gates were open, and, seizing upon the Citizens, they bound them, plunder'd their Houses, and slew many; and having thus by Treachery made themselves Masters of the City, they brake down the Walls.

DURING this Siege, there perish'd more than 22,000 of the Pilgrims, by Famine, Sword, Pestilence, and other Ways; and so the Rest return'd to their own Homes.

IN 1228, Pope Gregory, being implacably bent to root out the *Albigenses*, stirred up the young King of *France* against them; who sent a great Army into *Provence*, utterly to destroy them; which Army, hearing that the Earl of *Tholouse* was in the Castle call'd *Saracen*, purposed to besiege him, as being there shut up. But the Earl having Notice of their Intent, lay in Ambush in a Wood, thro' which they were to pass; and when they were come to the Place, he assaulted them, and after a bloody Fight, slew many, took 200 Knights, and about 2000 Men at Arms. That Summer the King of *France* sent three Armies against them, all which were either put to Flight, or taken and imprison'd by the said Earl.

YET the same Year, *Imbert*, of *Beauvin*, went against them with a great Army of Crossed Soldiers, amongst whom were three Archbishops, every one with the Pilgrims of his Jurisdiction. The Earl of *Tholouse* was fain to shut himself within the Walls of *Tholouse*, where he was strongly besieged by the Pilgrims, who also wasted, and spoiled his Country, and Harvest, far and near on every Side. The Siege continuing, the Citizens suffer'd great Famine; and when they were brought to this Extremity, the Abbot of *Grandsylve* went from the Pope's Legate, to offer Peace to Earl *Remund*, and the *Tholousians*. Some of the Earl's Captains dissuaded him from it, knowing the Perfidiousness of the Papists; but the Cries of the hungry Multitude prevailed, so that a Truce was agreed upon for certain Days; and Earl *Remund*, upon the Day appointed, went to the Place, where the Peace was
to

to be concluded. But when he came thither, the Abbot perswaded him, that it was necessary the Agreement should be perfected in the Presence of the Queen-Mother, who was Regent of *France*; and pawn'd his Faith to him, That if he would go to her, he should return in Safety. The Earl, overcome by these Promises, assented; and *Meaux* was the Place chosen by the Queen for their Meeting. But as soon as Earl *Remund* came thither, contrary to all Oaths and Engagements, he was made a Prisoner, and had a Guard set upon him, that he might not start aside; and instead of a Treaty, he must submit to whatever should be enjoin'd. In 1229, divers Councils were held against the *Albigenses*: One at *Tholouse*, the Acts whereof were proclaim'd in that City by *Romanus*, the Pope's Legate: Another at *Narbonne*, where more cruel Decrees were made against them: A third at *Beziers*, exceeding in Rigour both the former; and amongst the rest, an Oath of Abjuration, whereby all Persons, Males at Fourteen Years old, Females at twelve Years old, were to abjure all Heresy, as they called it, and to swear that they would keep the Faith, and defend the Catholick Church, and persecute all the Opposers of the same; and that all that took not this Oath within fifteen Days, should be held suspected of Heresy, and proceeded against accordingly.

IN 1232, Queen *Blanche*, and the Pope's Legate, so over-aw'd the Earl of *Tholouse*, that they caused him to make cruel Edicts against his own Subjects of the *Albigensian* Religion: *That they should be persecuted, searched out, and taken. That whosoever could apprehend any one of them, should have a Mark for each of them so taken. That all that were suspected to be of their Religion should be excluded from bearing Office. That all Houses should be pulled down, wherein any of them should be found. That all their Goods*
and

and Inheritances should be confiscated. That the like should be done to all that should aid or abet them, or that should hinder, or not assist the Inquisitors, in the Execution of their Office. That whosoever should be suspected of their Heresy, should have an Oath given him to keep the Peace, and the Catholick Faith.

THE Earl of Foix and Comminges, and the Prince of Bern, yet remain'd to be conquer'd; and the Pope's Legate thought that the Earl of Tholouse was the fittest Person to deal with them: Whereupon he caus'd him to write to them, to perswade them to embrace the Catholick Faith. But the Earl of Foix return'd Answer: *That he could not forsake his Faith at such a Time, wherein Men might think that he did it rather out of Fear, than upon any good Grounds; and that it was fitter for them to convince him of the Truth of their Way, than to allure him by Promises, or force him thereto by Arms: And, that if they brought that World of Pilgrims against him, which they threaten'd, he trusted in GOD, that he should make them know the Justice of his Cause, and make them repent the Rashness of their Vow. But the Earl's Subjects, fearing that their Lord, being aged, and without Wife and Children, should leave them to the Mercy of the first Conqueror, intreated him to come to a Composition with the Legate; whereupon he began to treat, and at last yielded up divers Castles into the Hands of the King of France, upon Promise, That he would rule with Justice and Equity.*

IN 1234, the Opinions of the *Albigenses* were much spread abroad in the Parts of *Spain*, and other adjacent Countries; and they had Bishops among them, who boldly preach'd against the *Romish* Errors, and especially against Transubstantiation: Whereupon a *Croisado* was preach'd against them; and a very great Army of Pilgrims being assembled
toget-

together, were sent against them by Pope *Gregory*, who slew them all, with their Bishops, seiz'd on their Cities, and plunder'd them.

ABOUT the same Time, another Army of these Pilgrims went against others of them on the Borders of *Germany*, who retiring into a Fenny Place for their Security, were there all slain.

THE same Year the LORD rais'd up *Trancavel*, the Natural Son of the Earl of *Beziers*, deceased; who was encourag'd and assisted by a Number of valiant Captains, who told him: That they would assist him to revenge the Outrages done to his Father, who was basely depriv'd of his Land, being betray'd, imprison'd, and at last poisoned. Whereupon he resolv'd to recover by the Sword, what was so unjustly taken from him; and before the Enemies had Notice of his Design, he took divers strong Castles: So that the Pope's Legate, and the Bishop of *Tholouse*, were much astonish'd to see these Men stand up for the *Albigenses*, whom they suppos'd to have been utterly suppress'd.

THEN the Pope's Agents caus'd the Cross to be preach'd; and the Bishop of *Narbonne* animated the People of his Diocese to go against them, and to make an End of the poor Remainder of the *Albigenses*.

AN Army being rais'd, the Pope's Legate led it to *Tholouse*, and when the Citizens appear'd upon their Ramparts, he told them: *That he was come thither for their Preservation.* They thank'd him, but withall told him: *That if he did not instantly retire himself, they would give him the Chace.* And presently came *Trancavel*, who so valiantly set upon the Legate's Troops, that he quickly overthrew them,

them, and chac'd them to the very Gates of *Carcaffon*; and the Legate had much ado to save himself: But that which most anger'd the Legate, was, That *Trancavel* found Entertainment in some Part of *Carcaffon*: So that the Pilgrims durst hardly peep out of the City Gates. And when he heard of any more Pilgrims coming to the Legate, he used to meet them, and to lay in Ambush for them; and often overthrowing them, their Designs were frustrated.

THIS Man kept the Field 'till 1242, and still prevail'd against all the Crossed Soldiers that came against him; whereupon *Aneline*, the Pope's Legate, wrote to the Pope, That if he caus'd not the Cross to be preach'd in many Parts of *Europe*, the Church was like to sustain much Damage by this Enemy: For (says he) *he is more cruel and subtle, than any before him.*

BUT a little before, the Bishop of *Tbolouse* was inform'd of a certain Matron, who having her Children, Brethren, and Friends about her, was dying an Heretick; whereupon he ran to her, and found it even so by the Confession of the Woman herself; who desir'd to die in the Faith of the *Albigenses*, and doubted not to be saved. Then the Bishop condemn'd her, and deliver'd her to the Secular Power, who presently carry'd her forth in the Bed, wherein she lay, and burnt her.

IN the Year 1236, many embracing the Faith of the *Albigenses*, beyond the *Alps*, Inquisitors were sent against them, especially one Friar *Robert*, who caus'd many of both Sexes to be apprehended; and when they continued constant in the true Faith, and would not renounce the same, in the Space of two or three Months, he caus'd fifty of them, either to be burnt or bury'd alive.

IN 1239, the King of *France* having garrison'd divers Castles within the Country of the *Albigenses*, who greatly oppress'd them, they betook themselves to Arms, besieging those Garrisons; whereupon they sent to the King of *France*, craving that present Aid might be sent them. Then the King of *France* sent the Lord *John*, of *Bellemont*, with an Army to aid them; who, coming into that Country, besieg'd the strong Castle of *Montreal*, and at last took it, with divers others, belonging to the *Albigenses*; whereby they were suppress'd for that Time. But the Year after, the Earl of *Tholouse* took Arms again, and assaulted the Earl of *Provence*, who presently sent to the *French* King for Aid; and the *French* Troops that were about *Avignon*, hasten'd to the Relief of the Earl of *Provence*: Which the Earl of *Tholouse* hearing of, he lay in Ambush in their Way, and suddenly setting upon them, slew Many, and dispers'd the Rest; and the War so prosper'd in his Hand, that in a short Space he recover'd, to his former Dominion above twenty Castles from the *French*, and the Earl of *Provence*, and sharply punish'd his Rebels.

ABOUT the same Time, the Citizens of *Milan* being provok'd thereunto by the Pope and Emperor, burnt many of the *Albigenses*, who were their fellow Citizens.

IN 1241, the Earl of *Tholouse* continuing his Wars against the Earl of *Provence*, almost beat him out of his Country; so that the Earl of *Provence* was fain to send to the Kings of *England* and *France* (who had marry'd two of his Daughters) to mediate for him; and they writing to the Earl of *Tholouse*, obtain'd Peace for their Father-in-Law.

IN

IN 1242, the Bishops of *Narbonne* and *Albium*, and the Steward of *Carcasson*, apprehended 200 of the *Albigenses*, in a certain Castle of *Tboloufe*. All these upon Examination, adhering constantly to the true Faith, without wavering, were cruelly burnt in the Flames. And in the Year following, there were 224 more of them likewise burnt.

SHORTLY after, it pleas'd GOD, that great Contentions arose between the Pope and the Emperor, whereby the Gospellers enjoy'd some breathing Time from their former Miseries.

BUT in 1270, *Peter Cadarita* and *William Calenicus*, were sent as Inquisitors from the Pope, into the Kingdom of *Arragon*, severely to punish those that had imbrac'd the Faith of the *Albigenses*; and amongst others, they condemn'd *Arnaldus Castlebonius*, the Viscount, and his Daughter *Ermesenda*, Countess of *Foix*. They also decreed their Memory to be detestable, commanding their Bones to be digg'd out of their Graves, and to be burn'd: They also call'd *Roger*, Nephew of *Ermesenda*, into Judgment for the same Crime.

IN 1281, there was a great Persecution raised against the Gospellers in the County of *Albi*, by one *William de Gourdon*, Captain and President of *Carcasson*, under *Philip*, the French King; who, by a Proclamation, commanded all the *Albigenses* to be extirpated, and drove out of their Dens and Lurking-holes; and all such as favour'd, or conceal'd any of them, to be utterly rooted out: As also, that the innumerable Company of their Children, which would not be reduc'd to the Catholick Faith, and Unity of the Church of *Rome*, should not be admitted into the City of *Realmont*, or the Territory thereof, nor to any Honour or Office. That such likewise as favour'd or conceal'd any of them,

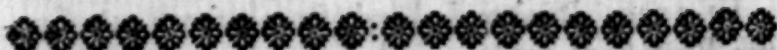
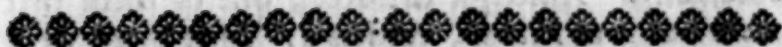
them, should be banish'd for ever from the City of *Realmont*, their Goods confiscated, and their Children excluded from all Honours and Dignities. Yet notwithstanding the Severity of this Edict, God hid and preserv'd many of them, even in *Realmont* itself, tho' many of them fled into *Arragon* and *Sicily*, where they might enjoy more Freedom of Conscience.

IN 1285, *Garelus* and *Segarellus*, of *Parma*, preach'd and spread the Doctrine of the *Albigenses* in *Parma*, and in many Cities of *Lombardy*; whereupon Pope *Honorius*, by a publick Edict, condemn'd their Doctrine, and commanded them to be rooted out.

IN 1315, the Friars Inquisitors, rais'd a great Persecution against the Gospellers in *Passau*, in *Austria*, and burnt many of them; who continu'd constant in the Faith, and took their Death very chearfully. Amongst the Rest, one of them that were burnt at *Vienna*, confess'd: That there were 80,000 of them in *Bohemia* and *Austria* at that Time. Their chiefeft Ministers were, *Bartholomew Faustus*, *James Justus*, *Bonnatus*, *William*, and *Gilbert*; one of whom, *James*, was murther'd between two Walls by the merciless Inquisitors: *Bonnatus* was burnt alive, and *William*, *Gilbert*, and *Bartholomew*, were condemn'd after their Death. The House where they used to preach, was pulled to the Ground, and all that adher'd to them were Anathematiz'd.

IN 1322, *Walter Lollard* (from whom our *English* Professors were call'd *Lollards*) was taken at *Collen*, where he had privately preach'd, and thro' God's Blessing, drawn many from Ignorance and Errors, to embrace the Truth, and persisting in his Opinions, was condemn'd and burnt alive.

YET notwithstanding all Cruelties us'd against them, their Enemies could never prevail to a total Extirpation of them, but they still lay hid like Sparkles under the Ashes, desiring and longing to see that, which now, thro' GOD's Grace, their Posterity do enjoy, *viz.* The Liberty to call upon GOD in Purity of Conscience, without being forc'd to any Superstition or Idolatry: And so instructing their Children in the Service of GOD, the LORD was pleas'd to preserve a Church amongst them, 'till the Dispersing of the Gospel in a more general Way, by the Ministry of *Luther*, and his Fellow-Labourers. At which Time the *Albigenses* receiv'd with Greediness the Doctrine of the Gospel, and so became more eminent in their Profession of Piety, than they were formerly.





THE
PERSECUTION
OF THE
CHURCH of GOD
IN
Bohemia,

Which began in the Year 894.

THE *Bohemians* were Heathens and Idolaters, 'till their Captain *Borivoius*, going into *Moravia*, in 894, was converted to the Faith of *Christ*; whereupon, he, together with Thirty others, was baptiz'd. At his Return into *Bohemia*, he took along with him *Methudius*, Bishop of *Moravia*; by whose Ministry, *Ludomilla*, the Duke's Wife, was converted.

BORIVOIUS busying himself in erecting Schools and Churches, it pleas'd God, that in a short Time, a great Harvest was gather'd, many of the Nobility and Commons being daily convert-ed; but *Satan* envying the Progress of the Gospel, presently rais'd a Persecution against the Professors of it. For first, *Borivoius* was banish'd by the Faction of the Idolaters, and then compell'd to resign his Dominions to his eldest Son; who, dying soon after, his younger Son succeeded, who was a very holy Man; yet, was drawn to marry *Drabomira*, famous for Nobility and Beauty, but a Heathen; however she promis'd, after Instruction, to be baptiz'd. During her Husband's Life, she conceal'd her Hatred against the Christians; but he being dead, the Grand-mother (*Ludomilla*) educated the eldest Son (*Wenceslaus*) and *Drabomira* took the Youngest (*Bolislus*) and usurp'd the Government; commanding the Christian Churches to be shut up, the Exercise of their Worship to cease, prohibiting Ministers from instructing the People, and School-masters from teaching Youth. Such as disobey'd, were imprison'd, banish'd, and put to Death.

AT *Prague*, the Magistrates were chang'd, and Idolaters were substituted in the Room of Christians, by whose Incitements the Christians were openly, and unworthily abused and murther'd, whilst the Murtherers went away with Impunity: But if any Christian kill'd a Heathen, tho' in his own Defence, ten Christians were massacred for that one. Yet the Cruelty of *Drabomira* was not satisfy'd herewith; but that she might destroy all the Christians, she dealt with one *Balloius*, a cruel Wretch, whom she had set over the City of *Prague*, earnestly intreating him, by Fraud or Force to effect it, promising him a great Reward if he did it. He thereupon arm'd many Conspirators at his House, with whom he hasten'd to those that were design'd for

for Slaughter: But the Plot, thro' God's Mercy, being discover'd to the Christians, 400 of them met to defend their Lives. The Issue of the Fight was Victory to the Christians; the Streets being polluted with the Blood of 800 that were slain. Then *Drahomira* pretended, that she was much displeas'd with the Tumult, commanding, That the Arms of both Parties should be brought to the City Magazine; severely forbidding any Man to walk with Dart or Sword. The Christians, tho' suspecting her Fraud, yet, as they might not seem disobedient, brought their Arms to the Magazine; the Enemies pretending also to do the like. This being done, *Drahomira* employ'd her Cut-Throats, in the Night, to set upon the unarm'd Christians, whereby above 300 of them were slain in one Night. At this, *Drahomira* much rejoic'd; but yet not satisfy'd; she commanded the Mayor of *Prague*, to destroy all the Christians. Whereupon he beset all the Streets and Passages, and slew all that he met withall; 'till the Christians, gathering themselves together, encounter'd with him, put him to flight, and in the Pursuit, slew this wicked Person. This so inrag'd *Drahomira*, that she commanded the two Churches to be burnt down; in one of which, her Husband was interr'd. Whilst she thus raged against the Christians, *Wenceslaus*, now grown to Years, by the Advice of his Grandmother, and the Christian Nobility, took upon him the Government; and the better to establish Peace, he assign'd the City of *Bolislavia*, and adjacent Parts, to his Mother, and younger Brother.

YET *Drahomira* laid not aside her bloody Designs against the Christians, which she first shew'd against *Ludomilla*, substituting two Villains, in the Night, to murder her. These Fellows, finding her at her Payers, strangled her. Some there were

that provok'd *Wenceslaus* to revenge that wicked Act, which he refus'd; because he judg'd it contrary to that Duty, which he ow'd to a Mother; and to the Modesty and Patience of a Christian. But he was shortly after ill requited by this unnatural Monster; who, by Treachery, slew him also.

BOLISLAUS, having obtain'd the Government, threaten'd Imprisonment and Death, to all Ministers and Christians, if they did not immediately leave *Bohemia*. Hereupon many fled, others were seiz'd on, and tormented to Death divers Ways; but GOD suffer'd not *Drabomira* to escape his revenging Hand; for in that Place, where the Ministers Bones lay unbury'd, the Earth open'd of itself, and swallow'd her up alive with her Chariot; which Place is to be seen before the Castle of *Prague*, to this Day.

IN 970, *Weytich*, the second Bishop of *Prague*, labouring seriously in converting the Relicks of the *Gentiles*, they rais'd so great a Sedition against him, as forc'd *Weytich* to a voluntary Banishment. Then the *Pagans* rose up against his Brethren, and murder'd five of them, and then conspir'd against their Prince; but were overcome in Battle.

NOT long after, the Pope, having usurp'd Dominion over other Churches, sought to obtrude his Superstitions upon the *Bohemians* also: But especially he commanded, That all their sacred Service should be in the *Latin* Tongue, and that they should not have the Cup in the Sacrament. The *Bohemians* sent two Ministers, and four others to *Rome*, in 977, to the Pope, desiring to be eas'd of these Grievances; and at last obtain'd their Request.

IN 1197, Pope *Celestine* sent a Cardinal into *Bohemia*, to inhibit Ministers Marriage, and to divorce such as were marry'd; but the Bishops and Ministers almost stoned him to Death.

AFTERWARDS the Cup was taken away in the Sacrament; but there were many that opposed that Sacrilege also; and among the rest, *John Melicius*, of a noble Family, and fervent Spirit, much honour'd for his rare Learning, and Holiness of Life; in his Ministry, earnestly exhorted his Auditors to a frequent Communicating in both Kinds.

MR. *Matthias*, of *Prague*, was also a zealous Defender of the Communion in both Kinds. In 1375, he, with some other learned Men, went to King *Charles*, that then reigned, and requested him to call an Oecumenical Council, for the Reformation of the Church. *Charles* sending to the Pope about it, he was so incensed at the Message, that he commanded the King to punish those rash and heretical Men. Upon this, *Matthias* was banish'd the Kingdom, and the Use of the Sacrament in both Kinds prohibited through all *Bohemia*; so that the godly could not administer, and receive it, but in private Houses, in Woods and Caves; and not so, but with the Hazard of their Lives: For they were set upon in the Highways, plunder'd, beaten, and drown'd in Rivers; so that at last they were necessitated to go together in Companies and arm'd. This continued to the Days of *John Hus*, and *Jerome of Prague*. When these holy Men were burn'd at *Constance*, the Adversaries were not satisfied with their Blood, but took further Counsel, for the Destruction of the whole Nation: For when fifty-eight of the chief Nobles of *Bohemia*, in the Name of the Commons, in 1416, had sent Letters from *Prague* to the Council, complaining; that their Pastor, an innocent and holy Man, and
faith-

faithful Teacher of the Truth, was unjustly condemn'd; the Council, instead of answering them, wrote Letters to some violent Papists, who were in Authority, to assist their Legate in oppressing the Hereticks.

THEREUPON the Papists persecuted them all Manner of Ways, and used such Violence, as rais'd a Tumult at *Prague*, in 1419, wherein the inrag'd Multitude threw twelve Senators of *Prague*, with the Mayor, out of the Windows of the Senate-House, who fell upon the Points of Spears.

AFTER this, the Pope publicly excommunicated the *Bohemians*, at *Florence*, exciting the Emperor, Kings, Princes, Dukes, &c. to take up Arms against them; intreating them by the Wounds of *Christ*, and their own Salvation, unanimously to fall upon them, and utterly to extirpate that cursed Generation; promising Universal Remission of Sins to the most wicked Person, if he did but kill one *Bohemian*. Hereupon great Wars were rais'd against them; but it pleas'd God still to give them the Victory, under that brave Captain, *Zisca*.

YET still, as the Popish Party prevail'd at any Time, they exercis'd all Manner of Cruelty upon the poor Servants of *Christ*, insomuch, That at *Cuttburgh*, where were deep Metal Mines, in 1420, they threw into one of them 1700 Persons, and into another 1334, and into a third 1038 Persons.

THE same Year, a Merchant of *Prague* coming to *Breslaw*, in *Silesia*, the Emperor and Pope's Legate was there. Being at his Inn, he was drawn into Discourse, wherein he pleaded for *Hus*, and the Sacrament in both Kinds, for which he was cast

cast into Prison. The next Day a Student of Prague was cast into the same Prison. The Merchant exceedingly encourag'd him, saying: *O my Brother! What an Honour is it, that we are called thus to bear Witness to the LORD Jesus? Let us undergo the Trouble with Chearfulness. The Fight is but short, the Reward is eternal. Let us remember the LORD, what a cruel Death he underwent for us, and with what guiltless Blood we are redeem'd, and what Torments the Martyrs have patiently endured.* When they were brought to Execution, and the Ropes, by which the Horses were to drag them through the Streets, were fasten'd to their Feet, the Student, affrighted with the Terrors of Death, and allured by the fair Promises of the Legate, recanted. But the Merchant, like an unshaken Rock, told them: That their Hopes of any Recantation from him were but in vain. *I am ready to die* (saith he) *for the Gospel of the LORD Jesus.* And so being drawn slowly thro' the Streets, he was brought to the Place of Execution, and there burnt.

IN 1421, *Pichel*, the chief Magistrate of the City of *Litomeritia*, having taken Twenty-four of the chief Citizens, and amongst them his Son-in-Law, put them in an high Tower, and at last brought them out, half dead with Hunger and Cold, and adjudg'd them to be drown'd. When they came to the River *Albis*, their Wives, Children, and Friends made great Mourning. The Mayor's own Daughter also came wringing her Hands, and falling at her Father's Feet, besought him to save her Husband's Life: But he, harder than a Rock, bad her give over, saying: *What? Can you not have a worthier Husband than this? To whom she answer'd, seeing his Inexorableness: You shall never more espouse me to any: And so beating her Breasts, and tearing her Hair, she follow'd*
among

the rest. When the Martyrs came to the River, whilst Ferries were preparing, they with loud Voices call'd Heaven and Earth to witness their Innocency; and so taking Leave of their Wives, Children, and Friends, exhorting them to Constancy and Zeal for the Truth, they were carried and cast into the Midst of the River, with their Hands and Feet bound together, and so drown'd; and if any were driven to the Banks, they were stabb'd with Iron-Forks and Pikes. The Mayor's Daughter, seeing her Husband thrown into the River, leap'd in after him, and caught him about the Middle, but being unable to draw him forth, they were both drown'd. The next Day they were found Arm in Arm, and were both bury'd in one Grave.

ABOUT the same Time, a Company of Soldiers going towards *Prague*, seized upon a godly Minister, with four other Men, and four Boys, the eldest of whom was not above eleven Years old, for administering, and receiving the Sacrament in both Kinds, and carry'd them to their Colonel; the Colonel sent them to the Bishop, who requir'd them to abjure, or else he would burn them. The Minister stoutly answer'd: *The Gospel teacheth otherwise: so that you must either approve what we do, or blot it out of your Bible.* Hereupon one of the Troopers smote him so violently in the Face, that the Blood ran out of his Mouth and Nose. The Bishop made this Minister the Subject of his Mirth all that Night, and the next Day burn'd them all in one Fire.

ANOTHER Captain, violently entering into a Church, where many People were met together, killed some, and took others Prisoners; and going to the Communion-Table, he took the Cup, being full of Wine, and drinking to his Horse, he
gave

gave him thereof, saying: *His Horse was now one of the Communicants in both Kinds.*

THIS Year, a godly and eloquent Preacher in Prague, together with twelve more Men, was apprehended by a Captain, carry'd into the Common-Hall, and there privately beheaded; but their Blood running out, caus'd a Tumult in the City, wherein some of the Senators were slain, and others saved themselves by Flight.

IN 1459, there were divers godly People in Bohemia, Ministers, Nobles and Commons, who being much burden'd in Conscience about the Superstitions in the Church of Rome, obtained of George Pogiebracius, their King, a Place in the hilly Country, near to Silesia, to inhabit; where throwing off all superstitious Practices, they apply'd themselves to the Form of the Primitive Simplicity, calling themselves *Brethren and Sisters.*

THE Beginning of this Church, displeased the Devil, and therefore he rais'd a sudden and violent Tempest to overthrow it: For the Fame of it being spread abroad, the Priests in every Pulpit stirred up the Hatred of the People against them, crying out: *Blow out these Sparks. Blow them out before they grow into a Flame.*

IN 1461, One of their Ministers, with some others of them, coming to Prague, to visit their Friends, were betray'd. Upon the Coming of some Officers to apprehend them, the Minister said to them all: *All that will live godly in Christ Jesus, must suffer Persecution; therefore come forth, and follow us to Prison, which they did.* The King believing the Slanders that were raised against them, as that they were attempting Sedition, &c. commanded the aged Minister to be tortured; but he falling

falling into an Extasy, felt no Pain at all. The Tormentors supposing him to be dead, took him down from the Rack; but after some Hours, he came to himself, and by the Intercession of a Friend, was dismissed.

PRESENTLY after there came forth from the King an Edict, forbidding all Pastors to administer Holy Services without Ceremonies; and withall, threatening Death to those that should administer to the *Brethren*, called now by the hatefull Name of *Piccards*. The *Brethren* hereupon were brought into great Extremity, being like Sheep destitute of Shepherds. Presently came forth a new Edict, That none of them should be suffer'd to live either in *Bohemia*, or *Moravia*. Hereupon they were dispersed amongst the Woods and Mountains, dwelling in Caves; where yet they were scarce safe, so that they were forc'd to make no Fire, nor dress any Meat, but in the Night-time, lest the Smoak should betray them. In the cold Winter Nights, sitting by the Fire, they apply'd themselves to reading the *Bible*, and holy Discourses. When they went abroad in the Snow, to provide them Necessaries, they went close together; and lest their Foot-steps should betray them, the hindermost of them drew a great Bough after him, to cover the Prints of their Feet.

THESE *Brethren* chose certain Elders by Suffrage, to whom they promised Obedience; and by the Advice of these Elders, the chief of the *Brethren* in *Bohemia* and *Moravia*, were call'd together in a Synod, in the Mountains, to ordain *Ecclesiastical Laws*, whereby they should be governed. They appointed also sundry Days for Fasting and Prayer for themselves, and their dispersed Friends; taking Counsel from God's Word, concerning those Things, which were requir'd to the
fuller

fuller Reformation, both of Life and Doctrine. That which most afflicted them was, want of Pastors, not knowing where they should have new ones, after those were dead, who then lived with them. After some Debate, they resolv'd, that *Christ* had given this Authority to his Church, that such as were ordain'd themselves, might ordain others. But yet some Scruple arose, Whether such as were but Presbyters, might ordain without a Bishop? Wherefore they met together, and with Fasting, Prayers and Tears, they sought unto GOD to reveal his Will unto them in this Difficulty; and afterwards making a Scrutiny, by Lot, the LORD answer'd them: *That it was lawfull for Presbyters to ordain Presbyters*, which occasion'd great Joy unto them.

THESE Brethren then deliberated among themselves, whether they should join with the *Waldenses* in *Moravia* and *Austria*, and so be one People and one Church with them. The Purity of their Doctrine and Christian Conversation, much pleased them; but again, it much displeased them, that they concealed the Truth, not openly professing it as they ought; but to avoid Persecution, they frequented the Churches of the Papists, and so communicated with Idolaters. At last they concluded to admonish them of this Evil; and for this End, they sent some able Men to them. The *Waldenses* answer'd: That to be in Unity with them was very gratefull; and for the Evils objected against them, they were not ignorant of them, nor would defend them, but rather would labour to amend them; concluding, That they desir'd to have a fix'd Day of meeting with the Brethren, in which they would take further Order about their Business. But before the Time came, the Papists, having some Intelligence of it, raged so violently against the *Waldenses*, that they burnt the Chief of them at

Vienna, and so persecuted the rest, that they were fain to provide for their own Safety by Flight.

IN 1468, There came out a new Decree against these *Brethren*, requiring all the Nobles of *Bohemia*, to apprehend as many as they could, within their several Jurisdictions, and to proceed against them.

MANY therefore were apprehended and put into Prison, where they were kept for a long Time: But, through the wonderful Working of GOD, the more the Enemies labour'd to put out this Spark, the more it broke forth into a Flame: For many of their Peers submitted to the Discipline of the *Brethren*, building Churches for them in their Towns and Villages, so that in the Year 1500, they had in *Bohemia* and *Moravia*, about 200 Churches.

AFTER the Death of *Pogiebracius*, *Uladislaus*, a *Polonian* succeeded in the Kingdom; to whom *The Brethren* wrote an Apology, by Reason of many foul Accusations that were carry'd to him against them. This so exasperated their Enemies, that they endeavour'd, by a most impudent Invention, to stir up the Hatred of all Men against them. The Way they used, was this: They suborn'd a wicked Villain to say: That he came from amongst them, and that he had been an Elder; but had therefore forsaken them, because in their Meetings they used to blaspheme GOD, the Virgin *Mary*, and the Saints, to mingle themselves incestuously, after the Manner of the *Adamites*, to commit Murder, and practice Witchcraft, &c. They led this Man through the Towns and Cities, as a Spectacle. Then they brought him to the Church, where they made him abjure his pretended Errors, and beseech the People to pray for him, a most miserable

miserable Sinner; and warned them to take Heed, by his Example, of the *Piccards*. They also publish'd his Confession in Writing, being confirm'd with the Seals and Subscriptions of some Deans and Priests, causing them to be read in the Churches. But the Devil was fooled herein; for the *Brethren*, by publick Writings, did confute these Lies; and the Villain, trembling so often to forswear himself, in the Sight of the People, confessed at last, That he was suborned to do what he did, and that he knew not any of the *Piccards*. And thus far it made for Good, that some, to make Experience of so great Villainies, began privately and disguis'd, to frequent the Assemblies of the *Brethren*; and finding it to be far otherwise than it was reported, associated themselves with them, as with true Christians.

IN 1488, *Matthias*, King of *Hungary*, banish'd the *Brethren* from *Moravia*, which caus'd some Hundreds of them, taking a Minister along with them, to go into *Moldavia*: Whereupon the *Brethren* in *Bohemia*, sent one of their Elders to them, to exhort them unto Patience under this Persecution.

SHORTLY after the restless Enemies of God and his Church, raised another Persecution against the *Brethren* of *Bohemia*. For some Bishops consulting together, suborned the Queen, great with Child, (so that they conceiv'd the King would deny her nothing) to request of him, that he would severely punish the *Piccards*. The King being displeas'd at her Request, only nodded his Head, but gave no Answer at all. Yet the Bishops, in his Presence, began to draw up the Edict. The King going into his Chamber, fell down on his Knees, and with Tears besought God to forgive the Guilt of those bloody Counsels, and to grant no Success

to them; and God heard his Prayers, and shew'd some Examples of his severe Judgments on the Authors of this Conspiracy.

Two Years after, the Bishops by their Impunity prevail'd with the King, that sharp Remedies should be used against those growing Evils, as they pleas'd to call them; whereupon an Edict was sent forth, that all the *Piccard's*, without Distinction of Sex, Age, or Quality, should be slain. This Mandate was brought to the Assembly of the States at *Prague*, by two Bishops. Divers of the chief Nobles oppos'd it, so that eighteen Months were spent in Debate, before any Thing was done; but at last, by the cunning Artifice of the Chancellor, and his bloody Associates, it was confirm'd by the greatest Part of the Nobility, in the Presence of the King; and a mutual Confederacy was enter'd into, that it should be prosecuted with an armed Power: But God following some of the chief Contrivers of it with sundry Judgments, it almost came to nothing.

In these Troubles, most of the Ministers were turned out of their Places, so that they durst not preach nor pray, but in private. And a certain Nobleman, having apprehended six of the *Brethren*, cast them into Prison. When they were brought forth to be burnt, they went chearfully to the Fire. And when the chief Officer, taking Affection to one of them, offer'd him his Life, if he would recant his Error, proffering him a Year's Time to consider of it; he paus'd awhile, but quickly answer'd: *It is too much, by such a Delay, to lose my Brethren's Company*; and so going along with them, they were burnt together.

SHORTLY after, the Chancellor, that had procur'd the passing of the Edict against the *Brethren*, as he

he return'd from the Parliament, visiting a certain Nobleman by the Way, with great Pleasure reported to him what was agreed upon against the *Brethren*. The Nobleman, having a Servant by, that was much addicted to the *Brethren*, asked him: How he lik'd it? The Servant answer'd: All are not agreed. The Chancellor ask'd him, Who durst oppose the States of the Kingdom? The Servant said: *There is one in Heaven, who, if He were not present at your Counsels, you have consulted in vain.* The Chancellor reply'd: *Thou Knave, thou shalt find that as well as the rest.* And rising up in a great Fury, a Carbuncle immediately rose upon his Foot, which turn'd to a sore Dis-ease, whereof he died miserably.

ANOTHER Nobleman of these Persecutors, as he was hunting, his Horse threw him, and his Arrow ran into his Thigh, and came out of his Loins, whereby he died a most painful Death.

MANY others of them felt the like Judgments of GOD, so that it grew into a Proverb amongst them: *If you are weary of your Life, attempt something against the Piccards.*

IN the mean Time the *Brethren* being much encouraged by Letters from *Luther*, *Bucer* and *Capito*, went on constantly; and through GOD's Mercy a great Number were added to the Church, 'till the fatal Year 1547. At which Time *Charles V.* putting the Decrees of the Council of *Trent* in Execution, raised Wars against the Protestant Princes in *Germany*. His Brother *Ferdinand* then solicited the *Bohemians* for Aid; but they refused it, in Regard of their antient League with the House of *Saxony*. But the German Protestants being overcome with War, *Ferdinand* entered *Bohemia* with an Army, seized on *Prague*, imprisoned the

principal Nobles, Barons and Citizens; some he scourged, some he beheaded, and upon others he laid grievous Fines, and of others he sequestred all their Estates. Also he disarmed the City of *Prague*, took away their Priviledges, banishing some, whilst others went into voluntary Exile.

THEN the Devil raised up some to lay all the Blame upon the *Brethren*; to which malicious Suggestions the King giving Heed, he first, by an open Proclamation, commanded all their Churches to be shut up, and then took away their Peers, and banished them all out of his Realms. When this Thunder-Bolt came abroad, the *Brethren* agreed amongst themselves, that they would be more faithful to GOD and their Consciences, than they had been; and so by common Consent, dividing themselves into three Companies, they went into *Poland*; and all of them had Experience of an admirable divine Protection in their Journey; escaping some that might, and would have robbed them, but that they were restrained by GOD. Also in most Places where they came, they found Christian Commiseration and Liberality of Men, and courteous Entertainment in *Poland*, though most of them were Papists. Yet not long after, the Bishop of that Part where they were, got a Mandate from the King to drive them away. Then they were forced to go into the farthest Parts of *Prussia*, where they had a Place of Habitation allotted to them, by Duke *Albert* of *Brandenburg*; and one *Paul Speratus*, a Protestant Bishop, having conferred with them about their Faith, was very courteous and charitable to them.

THE next Edict that *Ferdinand* set forth against the *Brethren*, was for the apprehending of all their Ministers; whereupon some of them retired into *Moravia*; others, that they might be near their Flocks,

Flocks, hid themselves in private Places, and in the Night-Time visited the Faithful. This continued for some Years, but at last three of them fell into their Enemies Hands; yet one of them, through the admirable Providence of GOD, escaped out of a deep Dungeon in the Castle of *Prague*, and fled to his *Brethren* in *Prussia*. As he passed through *Poland*, he preached the Gospel, and thro' GOD's Mercy, many of the Nobility, and others were converted by his Ministry; so that in a few Years he erected twenty Churches in *Poland*.

IN 1549, *Ferdinand* published another Decree for the extirpating both of the *Brethren* and *Lutherans*. About 200 Ministers that had receiv'd Ordination in *Germany*, or that were married, were banished out of the Kingdom.

THE Baron of *Schanow*, a Man of much Experience and Learning, being apprehended, under Pretence of some Conspiracy against *Ferdinand*, was imprisoned, examined, and laid on the Rack. He with an Heroick Indignation bit out his Tongue, and cast it away, and being asked why he did it, he wrote on the Wall; *I did it because I would not by any Tortures be brought to say any thing false against my self or others*. He also in writing taxed the Tyrannical Proceedings against himself and other Innocents, citing the King and his Counsellors to appear and answer it before the Tribunal of GOD, and so shortly after died.

AFTER the Death of *Ferdinand*, *Maximilian* succeeded, in 1564, who being of a peaceable Disposition, could by no Means be induced to decree that any should suffer for their Faith.

AFTER him *Rodolphus* succeeded, in 1607. who treading in his Father's Steps, the Church of *Christ* en-

enjoyed Peace under him, and pure Religion so flourished through the whole Kingdom, that there was scarce One in an Hundred, that did not profess the reformed Religion. But alas! with Liberty of Religion, by little and little, Men began to be licentious in their Lives; and Security so encreased, that some began to presage, That an horrible Tempest would again overwhelm them.

AFTER the Death of *Rodolphus*, succeeded *Matthias*, who coming into *Bohemia*, called an Assembly of the States, in 1617, but it being Harvest Time, few appeared. To those that appeared, *Matthias* said, That since he had no Issue he would adopt *Ferdinand* for his Son, and desired he might be crowned. The Orders assembled, affirmed, That a Matter of that Consequence could not be done in the Absence of the united Provinces. *Cæsar* urged, that what *Bohemia* should do would be confirmed by all the rest, and that it could not be deferred 'till another Time. In Brief, the Orders protested, That the Term of *Receiving him King*, was new; that he ought first to be chosen, and then received: And some perceiving that there was no Place for a free Voice, departed; others, partly allured by Promises, and partly deterred by Threats, staid, and were present at the Coronation of *Ferdinand*; after which he presently went into *Moravia*, *Silesia*, and *Lusatia*, requesting to be received for their King.

FERDINAND the Second, Emperor of *Germany*, being thus obtruded upon the *Bohemians*, contrary to the ancient Constitutions and Customs of the Kingdom, retired presently into *Germany*. Thereupon the Enemies of the Truth began openly to threaten the Protestants; and it appeared sufficiently that *Ferdinand* swore to the Orders with his Mouth, but in his Heart to the *Pope*. Presently after his Departure, the popish Bishops, Clergy,

and Nobles, began to vex his Subjects for Religion, contrary to that Assurance, which the King had given them. They attempted the like in *Prague*; the *Jesuits* daily threatening that their Liberty in Religion should not last long. Then they strictly prohibited the Protestants from printing any thing, unless licensed by the Chancellor of the Kingdom, while they themselves in the mean time divulged their own slanderous Pamphlets and Writings against the Protestants.

IN the Beginning of the Year 1618, the Governors of the University and Consistory met together, having formerly had Power so to do, and chose six Persons, two Barons, two Knights, and two Citizens, to consult what was best to be done in the Time of their Enemies Insolency. There presently came an Injunction in *Cæsar's* Name to inhibit them to call any together, and that if any Man was called, he should not dare to appear upon the Pain of high Treason.

NOTWITHSTANDING this, the greater Part of the States met. Then new Prohibitions and Threats were spread abroad; but the States being informed that those Thunder-Bolts came not from the King, but from the Castle of *Prague*, their abused Patience was turned into Severity, and being guarded with a great Troop, they went to the Castle, and apprehended two of the chief Authors of these Troubles, and threw them head-long out of the Castle Windows, together with their Secretary that was privy to all their Designs. But GOD intending to preserve them to be the *Bohemians* Scourges, they, falling upon the Grasse, and great Store of Papers, caught no hurt in the Fall.

HEREUPON a great Tumult was raised in *Prague*, but the States appeased it. The first Thing they did was

was to banish the *Jesuits* out of *Bohemia*, as the chief Contrivers of the Mischiefs. Then they wrote to *Caesar*, that they had no Intention against his Royal Majesty, but only to bring the Disturbers of the publick Peace to Punishment, being authorized thereto by his Majesty's Letter, and bound by their Protestation. Yet he resolv'd to revenge this Treason (as he called it) by Force of Arms. The *Bohemians* on the other Side resolved to defend themselves; and for that End they chose thirty Directors, and the *Moravians* and *Silesians* resolved to join with them, when they perceived Religion to be the Cause of the Quarrel. This indeed was that which the Enemies aimed at, and therefore they provoked the *Bohemians* by all Ways, that so they might make a Conquest of *Bohemia*. For this End an Imperial Army presently entered the Kingdom under *Dampier*, and a Spanish Army under *Bucquoy*.

IN the mean time the States resolved not to admit *Ferdinand* to be their King, for he was an open Enemy both to their Religion and Liberties, and obtruded upon them without a due Election. They also sent Embassadors to *Francfort*, (where the Electors were met together to choose a new Emperor,) desiring that *Ferdinand* might not be admitted amongst them as King of *Bohemia*. But notwithstanding all this, he was admitted and chosen Emperor. The *Bohemians* in the mean Time chose *Frederick*, Elector Palatine, for their King. This more enraged their Enemies, so that they sent another Army under *Maximilian* of *Bavaria*, which took two Protestant Towns by Storm, and put all to the Sword, and every where made a great Slaughter among the Protestants. Then the Imperial Armies came to *Prague*, which was thereupon struck with a panick Fear; and the Protestant Army being overthrown in a set Battle under the Walls, and their new King fled, they delivered up the

the City to them; the Conqueror promising to keep Articles agreed upon, but he performed nothing less. By their subtile and slow Proceedings, they did more Mischief to the Church of *Christ* than they had done lately by their outrageous Fury.

A little before this, (when it was debated at *Rome* how they should deal with the *Bobemians*, and *Germanians* after the Conquest,) it was agreed; That, seeing their former strong Purges, which they had used to expel *heretical* Humours, had not proved effectual, they resolved not to put them to Death, wherein they gloried as in Matyrdom; but rather to weary them, and to change the hateful Name of *Inquisition* into the milder Name of *Reformation*.

AND whereas there was a Debate amongst the *Imperialists* at *Prague*, whether all the *Protestants* should be presently banished; the Negative was resolved on, because they would then carry much away with them, and so spoil the Province, and endure their Banishment with greater Ease; therefore they concluded that they must first be squeezed, and deprived of their Goods. For this End the Soldiers at *Prague* were authorized to plunder the Houses of the Noblemen and Citizens; yet this was done at several Seasons, and mostly in the Night; by which Means, as the Enemies boasted, they took from the *Protestants* some Millions of Gold: For indeed hither were all their Riches brought in the Time of War, as to a Place of the greatest Security. As this fell to the Commanders Shares, so the neighbouring Places were exposed to the Fury of the rest, the common Soldiers robbing and spoiling Villages, Towns, and Churches, burning and killing without any Restraint.

THEN Commissioners were sent Abroad, promising Security to those Noblemen, Knights, Cor-
po-

porations, and Ministers, that would bring in a good Sum of Money to pay the Army, which yet they would not receive as a free Gift, but only desired to borrow it. *Cæsar's* Protection was also promised to those that were liberal, the rest were threaten'd to be plunder'd by the Soldiers. They set down also, what Sums they expected from every one within such a Time; and promised, That when that was paid, the Soldiers should be removed; which made every one bring in their Plate, Money, and Jewels, the more willingly.

COMMISSIONERS were then sent to require certain Cities, that belonged to the Protestant Noblemen, to maintain the standing Forces of the Kingdom, and to contribute Corn for their publick Granaries. But whilst they were sed with a vain Hope of lessening or removing the Soldiers, there were more enlisted, which raised the Taxes so high as was impossible for the People to pay.

THERE were some that were allured to deny the Truth, in order to be eased of Taxes, and Quartering of Soldiers; but this not being performed, they complained, that Promise was broken with them. The Jesuits answered them: *You have no Cause to complain, for we have provided for your Souls, you ought therefore cheerfully to help the King by Contributions, and Quartering of Soldiers. Hereticks must be dealt with, as mad Men and Children; from whom if you desire to get a Knife, you must shew them something else, though you never intend to give it them.*

THUS the Kingdom being emptied of Gold and Silver, counterfeit and adulterate Money was Coinced in great Abundance, that so the common People might rejoice in their Plenty. But in the mean

mean Time, the Soldiers would receive none but good Money.

GOLD and Silver also was raised to ten Times the Price of it, and on a sudden, the Emperor diminished the Value, making every Piece of Money to be worth but the tenth Part; whereby the *Bohemians* were more impoverished suddenly, than if they had lain under the Burden of an Army ten Years.

THEN they sent Abroad their Commissioners of Reformation, who in every Town and Village, endeavoured to bring *Protestantism* into Disgrace, and highly to magnify and set Abroad their own Cause. The most eminent Men for Honour and Estates, were invited to Apostacy. The inferior Sort were either fooled by their Examples, or compelled by Threatnings.

IN the next Place, the Soldiers exercised barbarous Tyranny against the Ministers of *Jesus Christ*. One aged Minister lying Sick in his Bed, they shot to Death as he lay; the next Day, they robbed and murdered another; as another was Preaching to his People, they came into the Church, and shot him to Death. A Nobleman, and a Minister hearing of Soldiers that were coming that Way, conveyed themselves into a Place of Safety. The Soldiers when they came, caught a School-master, and binding him with Cords, examined him, Where the Lord of that Place, and the Minister were, and where they had hid their Treasure? He professed, that he knew neither the one nor the other. At this they beat him, first with their Fists, then with their Cudgels; then stripping him naked, they so extremely singed him with Fire, that at last he promised to bring them where the Treasure was. Having brought

them to a Ditch full of Stones, for Greediness of Gold, they emptied it, but finding nothing, they beat him afresh. He then professing that he knew of no Treasure, though through Pain he had said so much; they cudgelled him, and with Clods beat him into the Ditch, and buried him under the Stones.

PRESENTLY after they lighted on another Minister, whom they so miserably tortured, that he died within five Days. They likewise shamefully abused his Daughters, whom they led away with them.

AFTER this, they met with another Pastor, and because he had a better Estate than the former, they tormented him the more. Sometimes they covered him over with hot burning Coals, sometimes with Ice, till they forced him to pay 1500 Florins for his Ransom. He died shortly after, through Extremity of Pain.

THEY fetch'd another Minister from his House, and miserably tortur'd him by twisting a Cord about his Head; then they tied his Hands behind him, and his Legs with a small Cord, intending the next Morning to torture him with Fire; but in the Night Time, as he was earnest at his Prayers, repeating these Words, *In thee, O LORD, is my Trust*, he perceived his Hands and Feet to be miraculously loosed. Hereupon he got up, and went to the Gate, where were three Watchmen; one of whom was standing with his Hand on his Sword, yet he passed by them undiscovered. When he came to the Town Gate, he was known by the Soldier that stood Centinel; but he, being a *Bohemian*, was overcome by Intreaty, and let him pass over the Bridge, whereby he escaped.

IN the Year 1621, there came forth an Edict, wherein the Blame of all the former Rebellion (as they called it) was laid upon the Ministers of *Prague*, because they had stirred up, by their seditious and lying Sermons (as they pleased to stile them) and by their Writings, not only the common People, but the Nobles also against *Cæsar*. Thereupon all the Ministers within *Prague*, were required within three Days to depart out of *Prague*, and within eight Days to depart out of the Kingdom, and the Provinces belonging thereto, and never to return again: And if any, under what Pretence soever, should stay or return, or if any should presume to harbour or conceal any of them, that both the one and the other should suffer Death.

THEN the Churches in *Prague* were given to the *Jesuits*. It cannot be expressed what Lamentations there were amongst the People, because they were now forc'd to leave their Pastors, and that for ever. Yet the *German* Ministers, whereof there were two, were suffered to continue, in Favour to the Duke of *Saxony*. Then as many as understood *Dutch*, flock'd to their Congregations, which so vexed the *Jesuits*, that they obtained, not a *Banishment*, but a *gracious Dismission* of them, as they would have it called. Multitudes of People followed them, with great Lamentations and Tears, and heard their farewell Sermon in the Field.

THE next Design was to remove the Ministers out of other free Cities, and the Commissioners of Reformation were employed herein. One of them coming to *Slana* with a Troop of Horse, went to Church, where the Minister (a godly and learned Man) was reading the Gospel. The Commissioner sent a Soldier to him to bid him give over; but the Minister still going on, he himself went to him

with his Sword drawn, crying out, *Thou foolish Preacher, leave off thy Babling*; and withall, he dashed the Bible out of his Hand with his Sword. At this the Minister, lifting up his Eyes, Hands, and Voice to Heaven, often repeated, *Wo, wo, unto you; you enter not into Heaven your selves, and forbid them that would. Wo, wo, wo unto you.* But they mocking at these Words, presently laid Hands on him, justling him to and fro; whereupon he said: *I am ready to suffer all this, and what else you shall impose, for the Name of my LORD Jesus Christ.* The People were much affrighted, but the Chief Magistrates, and many good Women interceeding for him, he was at last dismissed, upon Condition, That he should depart the City within three Days.

IN 1624, another Decree came forth from the King, whereby all the Ministers of the Gospel were commanded to depart the Kingdom by a peremptory Day prefix'd; because, as was alledged, they were seditious Men, and Seducers of the People. Herein they used this Artifice; in most Places the Edict was concealed, till the Time was almost or altogether elapsed; so that by this Means, the Ministers, not having Time to communicate their Counsels together, went into several Provinces; and some were fain to hide themselves in Caves and Dens: But they either returned privately, and visited their Auditors, or comforted such as came to them in the Mountains and Woods, Preaching and Administring the Sacraments to them.

As soon as the Enemies understood this, they presently published a new Decree, wherein a Punishment was proposed to those, that should conceal the Ministers, and a Reward to such as should betray them. Hereupon some of them were taken and cast into Prison. Then the *Jesuits* by all Ways

Ways solicited them to Apostacy; and some through Fear of Death, Hunger, Cold, the Stink of the Prison, &c. were prevailed with to renounce their Ministry. But most bore up courageously against all Storms. Some again by paying great Fines, others by giving it under their Hands, that they would never return into *Bohemia*, were dismissed.

ONE godly Minister was examined by Tortures, When, where, and to whom he had administered the Sacraments of *Baptism*, or the LORD's Supper? He answered: *He had neither laid down, nor slack'd his Ministry, which he received from Christ, and not from Cæsar.* Being proffered Life if he would change his Religion, he answered: *This Body of mine is subject to Corruption, and now it begins to decay already: why would you have me hinder it?* Being brought forth to Execution, the Crier proclaimed with a loud Voice, *That he was guilty of Sedition:* But he with a loud Voice, said: *I suffer for the Truth of Christ.* None of the Citizens were suffered to accompany him; yea, they were threatned to be shot, if they did but look out at their Windows: and that his Voice might not be heard, the Drums and Trumpets sounded continually. As he was passing on, he cheerfully said: *This Day shall my Soul be with Christ:* the Captain said, *With the Devil in Hell.* The Martyr replied: *No, but you with your impious Crew will run headlong thither, except ye repent.* Then his right Hand, wherewith he gave the Cup in the Sacrament, was cut off; after that his Head was cut off, his Bowels taken forth, and wrapp'd in his Shirt, his Quarters set upon four Stakes, and his Head upon a fifth.

THE next Design of the Enemies was against the Nobles. And first they seized upon some that

were of the Rank of Defenders of the Kingdom's Liberties, and then all those, whom they knew to have done any Thing for the common Good of Religion and Liberty. These were about the Number of Fifty Men, famous for Learning, Skill in Military Affairs, and Prudence in Government. All these were apprehended in their Houses, in one Night, and at one Hour, when they suspected no Danger, and were commanded by the Captains to get up into Waggon. Some of them were carried to the Castle of *Prague*, others to the Mayor's House. The next Day Proclamations were issued out, requiring all those that had hid themselves, or departed the Kingdom, to appear within six Weeks. Upon their Non-Appearance, Sentence was pronounced, *That all such as were guilty of Treason, should forfeit Goods, Honours, and Lives*; and then their Names were set upon the Gallows. The next Day, Sentence was pronounced against their Heirs, *That all their Goods should be confiscated to the King*.

THEN he proceeded to the Trial of the Noblemen whom they had taken. Two Apostate Civilians were appointed to examine them, with some of the Nobility, who tired them with a thousand impertinent Questions, labouring to extort that from them, whereof they were never guilty. One of them, not able to endure this, renting his Garments, and opening his Breast, said: *Tear this Body into a thousand Pieces, and search into my Heart, and you shall find nothing there, but what is in my Apology. The Love of Religion and Liberty, made us unsheath our Swords; but seeing GOD would have Cæsar prevail, and hath deliver'd us into your Hand, his Will be done.*

AFTER some Time, when none of the Noblemen would yield, or acknowledge themselves in
an

an Error, or sue unto them for Mercy, they proceeded to Sentence, which being passed, it was sent to *Cæsar*, to consider of it. *Cæsar* was so troubled, that he slept not that Night; and the next Morning calling his Confessor, he said to him: *I adjure thee upon thy Conscience to tell me, Whether I may with a safe Conscience pardon those that are condemn'd? Or whether I should suffer Execution to pass on them?* The Confessor answer'd: *O Cæsar, both are in thy Power.* Then he pardon'd some, and left others for Execution.

PRESENTLY after they were brought out singly to hear their Sentence, wherein some were condemn'd to Death, others to perpetual Imprisonment, others to Banishment, and some were reserv'd to *Cæsar's* further Pleasure.

THEN each Sort of Prisoners were carry'd to their several Prisons: The Noblemen into the Inward Prison of the Castle; and the Citizens to the Mayor's House. As they went, some Villains were suborned to insult over them, saying: *Why do they not now sing, the LORD reigneth?*

THE Wives, Children, and Kinsfolk, of the condemn'd Persons, humbly petition'd for their Lives; but Answer was made, that all the Favour which could be granted to them, was, That they should have Leave to bury their Dead.

IN the Evening, the condemn'd Men, which were Twenty-seven, had Notice given them of the Day, wherein they were to suffer: and were advised to send for *Jesuits* and *Capuchins*, or a Minister of the *Augustine* Confession, for the good of their Souls: but they must expect no Minister of the *Brethren*, for that would not be granted them. The *Jesuits* and *Capuchins*, not staying 'till they

they were call'd for, flock'd to them, using many Perswasions, if they would turn. But GOD so strengthen'd them, that all those Endeavours were in vain. Then some Ministers of the *Augustine* Confession were sent for, who spent that Time which remained, in Religious Exercises, Conferences, Prayer, and Singing of Psalms; and lastly, in administering the Sacrament to them.

THEY which were Prisoners in the Mayor's House, being called to Supper, the Night before they were to suffer, comforted themselves, saying: *This is the last Supper we shall eat on Earth, but To-morrow we shall feast with Christ in his Kingdom.* Whereupon a Papist flouted, saying: *Hath Christ Cooks for you in Heaven?*

IT being told them, that the Noblemen were coming to the Scaffold, in the Market-Place, where they were to suffer, they hasten'd to the Windows, and entertain'd their Fellow Martyrs, with singing the 44th Psalm. The Night after they spent in Psalms, Prayer, and godly Discourse, and mutual Exhortations, saying: *Since it hath pleased GOD to call us before others, to this Honour of Martyrdom, we hope by our Constancy we shall confound the World, glorify Christ, and leave a good Example to others.* As they were singing the 68th Psalm, wherein David prays to GOD, *To shew some Token of Good upon him;* one of them said: *Shew some Token of Good upon us, O GOD, whereby we, thy Servants, may be strengthen'd by thy Goodness, and our Enemies confounded.* And being full of Faith, he said further; *Be of good Cheer, for even in this, GOD hath heard your Voice, and To-morrow He will shew some wonderfull Sign, whereby He will witness, that we suffer for his Cause.*

EARLY in the Morning they washed their Faces, and put on clean Cloaths, as if they had been going to a Wedding, and cut off the Collars of their Doublets, that when they came to the Scaffold, there should be need of no new making ready. Then they earnestly prayed to GOD, *That He would be pleased to confirm and strengthen both themselves and the People, concerning their Innocency.*

PRESENTLY after Sun-rising, a beautifull Bow appear'd, and compassed the Heavens; the Ministers, Soldiers, and many others looking upon it. The Martyrs looking out of the Window, saw a Rainbow of an unusual Colour, the Heavens being clear, and there having been no Rain two Days before: Whereupon falling upon their Knees, they lifted up their Hands and Voices, praising GOD for this Sign that He shew'd from Heaven. Immediately a Gun was discharg'd, as a Warning for their bringing forth to Execution. Then those Champions of *Christ* encourag'd one another, praying, *That each of them might be strengthened.* And presently came Troops of Horse and Foot to fetch them; the Streets, Market-Place, and Houses being filled with Multitudes of Spectators.

THE Martyrs, being call'd forth one by one, went to their Death with an undaunted Courage, hastening as if they had been going to a Banquet. When one was call'd for, he thus took his Leave of the rest: *Farewell, most loving Friends. GOD give you the Comforts of his Spirit, Patience and Courage, that what you have professed with your Mouths, you may confirm by your glorious Death. I go before, that I may see the Glory of my LORD Jesus Christ. You will follow me, that we may together see the Face of our Heavenly Father. At this Hour all Sorrow departs from me, and joyfull Eternity shall succeed it.* Then the rest answer'd: GOD above,

bove, to whom you are going, prosper your Journey, and grant that you may pass happily from this Vale of Misery, to that heavenly Country. The LORD Jesus send his Angels to meet you. Go, dear Brother, into thine and our Father's House, and we will follow after. Presently we shall meet in the Heavenly Glory. And this we are confident of, through Him, in whom we have believed.

THE first was the Lord Schlik, a Man of admirable Parts, about fifty Years old. When he was condemn'd to be quarter'd, and his Parts to be scatter'd here and there, he said: *The Loss of a Sepulchre is easy.* Being exhorted by a Minister to Courage, he said: *I have GOD's Favour, so that no Fear of Death troubles me. I have formerly dared to oppose Antichrist, and I dare now die for Christ.* The Jesuits troubling him when he came to the Scaffold, he shook them off; and seeing the Sun shining bright, he said: *Christ, Thou Sun of Righteousness, grant, that through the Darkness of Death, I may pass into eternal Light.* And so having ended his Prayers, he constantly receiv'd the Stroke. His Head and Right Hand were hung on the High Tower upon the Bridge.

THE Lord Wenceslaus was next, about Seventy Years old, famous for Learning, Religion, and his Travels through divers Countries. His House was formerly plunder'd, even to the Wearing Apparel. At which he only said: *The LORD hath given, and the LORD hath taken away.* Being asked, Why he would engage himself in Frederick's Cause? He said: *My Conscience pressed me to do what I did. I am here, my GOD, dispose of me, thy Servant, as seems good in Thine Eyes. I am full of Years; take me out of this Life, that I may not see that Evil, that is coming on my Country.* Afterwards holding forth his Bible, he said: *Behold my*
Pa-

Paradise! it never yielded me so much Nectar and Ambrosia, as now. When he was sentenced, he said to the Judges: You have a long Time thirsted for my Blood; but know withall, you will find GOD, for whose Cause we suffer, a Revenger of innocent Blood. A Friar saying to him: You are deceived in your Opinion: He answer'd: I rely not on Opinion, but on the infallible Truth of GOD; for I have no other Way, but Him, who said, I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life. On the Scaffold, stroaking his long Beard, he said: My gray Hairs! behold what Honour remains for you, that you should be crowned with Martyrdom! And so praying for the Church, his Country, and his Enemies, he commended his Soul to Christ. His Head was cut off, and set on the Tower.

THE next was the Lord Harant, a Man that had gain'd much Experience by his Travels in *Asia, Africa, and Europe*. As he was going to suffer, he called the Minister to him, and said: *I much fear my Wife's Inconstancy in Religion, and therefore I desire you to exhort her to Constancy, and not to suffer herself to be drawn away from her Religion, by any Allurements; for I assure her, That it is the infallible Way to Salvation. He withall bad him exhort her to use more Clemency to his Subjects, rather easing, than overcharging them with Burdens; and likewise to have a Care of his Children, and to bring them up in the pure Religion. Being called to Execution, he said: I have travelled through many Countries, through many barbarous Nations, escaped many Perils by Sea and Land, and now suffer innocently in my own Country; and by them, for whose Sake, I, and my Forefathers have spent our Estates and Lives. Father, forgive them! Then he said: In Thee, O LORD, have I hoped, let me not be confounded. On the Scaffold he said: Into Thy Hands, O LORD, I commend my Spirit. In Thee,*

Thee, O LORD, have I trusted from my Youth. I am confident, I shall be accepted through that ignominious Death of my Saviour. Then kneeling down, he said: To Thee, O LORD, I commend my Spirit; for Thou, O GOD, just and true, hast redeem'd me, And thus saying, he receiv'd the fatal Stroke.

THE next was *Casper Kaplitz*, a Knight, aged Eighty-six. When the Minister came to him, after his Condemnation, he said: *See me, a miserable Man! who have often entreated my GOD, that He would have Mercy on me, and take me out of this miserable Life, but have not obtained it; for GOD hath reserved me to be a Spectacle to the World, and a Sacrifice to Himself. GOD's Will be done! My Death indeed is disgracefull in the Eyes of Men, but glorious in the Sight of GOD: For GOD will account that Death precious in his Sight, which I suffer for his Glory and Truth.* When it was told him, That he might have his Life, if he would ask Pardon; He answer'd: *That he would ask Pardon of Him, against whom he had committed many Sins all his Life, but he never offended the Prince; and therefore would not give Occasion to suspect, that he had committed some Crime, for which he had deserved Death. GOD forbid therefore, said he, that I should be separated from this holy Company of Martyrs.* As he was going to the Scaffold, being feeble with Age, he said: *O my GOD, strengthen me, lest I fall down, and become Matter of Scorn to the Enemies.* Being crooked with Age, his Head hung down, so that the Executioner could not come at his Neck; whereupon the Minister said to him: *My noble Lord, as you have commended your Soul to Christ, so now offer up your heavy Head chearfully to GOD, and lift up yourself towards Heaven.* Then lifting up his Head as well as he could, he said: *LORD Jesus, into Thy Hands I commend my Spirit.* And so his Head was cut off.

THE next was *Procopius Dorzecki*. After his Condemnation, he said to the Minister: *I have had a great Contention all Night with old Adam, so that it made me sweat again; but Thanks be to my GOD, by whom my Soul hath overcome all Temptations.* He said further: *O Almighty GOD, strengthen thy Servant, that I may not be made a Derision to mine Enemies by any Fear of Death, and as Thou wast wont to encourage the holy Martyrs, so I strongly believe Thou wilt comfort me.* When he was call'd forth to Execution, he said: *Thanks be to GOD, who doth now call me to Himself. To Him I have lived, and for Him I will die: For my Saviour hath therefore died and risen again, that He might be LORD both of the Living and the Dead. I know that my Soul shall live, and my Body shall be raised like to his glorious Body.* Upon the Scaffold, he said to the Imperial Judges: *Tell Cæsar, that we are now under his Judgment, but he shall undergo a more grievous, yet just, Judgment of GOD.* And seeing a Gold Medal hanging about his Neck, wherein was engraven the Coronation of *Frederick*, he deliver'd it to one that stood by, saying: *I require thee, that when my dear King Frederick, shall recover the Throne of this Kingdom, thou deliver him this, and tell him, that for his Sake I wore it 'till my Death, and that now I lay down my Life willingly, for GOD and my Country.*

THE next was the Lord *Frederick de Bile*.

THE next, was the Lord *Henry Otto*, a Man of great Judgment. Having receiv'd the Sentence of Condemnation, he said: *O Cæsar, do you indeed establish your Throne by our Blood? What Account will you make to GOD of it in the Day of Judgment? Kill my Body, disperse my Members whither you please; yet do I believe that my Saviour will gather them together again, and cloath them with Skin;*

so that with these Eyes I shall see Him, with these Ears I shall hear Him, with this Tongue I shall praise Him, and rejoice with this Heart for ever. Afterwards, when the Minister came to him, amongst other Things, he said: *I was troubled, but now I feel a wonderful Refreshing in my Heart*; adding, with his Hands lifted up to Heaven; *I give Thee Thanks, O most merciful Saviour, who hast been pleased to fill me with so much Comfort. Oh! now I fear Death no longer. I will die with Joy.* As he was going to the Scaffold, he said to the Minister: *I am sure Jesus Christ will meet my Soul with his Angels, that He may bring it to an everlasting Marriage, where I shall drink of a new Cup, a Cup of Joy for ever. This Death I know shall not separate me from Him.* Upon the Scaffold, lifting up his Eyes to Heaven, he said: *Behold, I see the Heavens open*; pointing with his Hand to the Place; where others also observed a certain Brightness, which dazzled their Eyes. After he had prayed silently, he said: *Into Thy Hands, O LORD GOD, I commend my Spirit, have Pity on me, through Jesus Christ, and receive me, that I may see Thy Glory.*

THE next was *Dionysius Zervius*, formerly a Papist. Being told of the Promises made to the People of GOD, concerning the *Pardon of Sins*, and *Assurance of Salvation* to those that believe in *Christ*, he struck his Breast, and with Tears in his Eyes, cried out: *This is my Faith, and in this I die. I rest in the Grace of Christ, and I trust in my GOD, that He will graciously accept my contrite Spirit.* Upon the Scaffold, the Jesuits exhorted him; but he listen'd not to them, but turned from the Crucifix, and falling down on his Knees, he prayed softly. Then looking up towards Heaven, he cried: *They can take away the Body, but they cannot take away the Soul. O LORD Jesus, I commend*

that

that unto Thee: And so he ended his Life, in the 56th Year of his Age.

THE next was an aged Man, about Seventy Years old, that had been long Lame. At the Time of his Death, he said: *O LORD Jesus, who being innocent, didst undergo Death, grant that I may die the Death of the Righteous, and receive my Soul into Thy Hands.*

The next was the Lord of *Ruginia*, a Man of excellent Parts, and full of Zeal for GOD. When he was adjudged to die, he said: That it was more welcome to him, than if the Emperor had given him his Life, and restored him to his Estate, with Addition of more. Afterwards he said to the Minister: *GOD is our Witness, that we fought for nothing but the Liberty of Religion; and in that we are overcome and condemn'd to die, we acknowledge, and find that GOD will not have his Truth defended by our Swords, but by our Blood.* When he saw divers call'd out before him, he said: *What is the Matter, my GOD? Thou knowest that I resign myself wholly unto Thee. Ah, do not despise thy Servant, but make Haste to take me away.* And when the Sheriff came for him, he rejoic'd, and said: *Praised be my GOD, that I shall now be taken out of the World, that I may be with Christ; and so he went to meet him.* On the Scaffold he comforted himself with that Promise: *Father, I will, that where I am, there my Servants be also, to behold that Glory which Thou gavest me. Therefore (said he) I make Haste to die, that I may be with Christ, and see his Glory.*

THE next was *Valentine Cockan*, about 60 Years old. During his Imprisonment, he was full of heavenly Discourse, and at the Scaffold, said: *Grant me, O GOD, to pass through this Valley of Death, that I may presently see Thee; for Thou knowest*

knowest, my GOD, that I have loved thy Word. Bring me, O GOD, through the Paths of Life, that I may see Fulness of Joy in thy Presence. Kneeling down, he said: Into thy Hands, O LORD, I commend my Spirit.

THE next was *Toby Steffick*. He spent most of the Time of his Imprisonment in silent Sighs and Tears. Before his Execution, he said: I have received many good Things of the LORD, all my Life long; shall I not receive this Cup of Affliction? I embrace the Will of GOD, who by this ignominious Death, makes me conformable to his Son, and by a narrow Way brings me to his Heavenly Kingdom. I praise GOD, who hath joined me undeservedly to these excellent Men, that I might receive with them the Crown of Martyrdom. When he was called to die, he said: My Saviour being about to die, said: Father, not as I will, but as Thou wilt: Thy Will be done: Shall I therefore, who am but a Worm, yea, Dust, and a Shadow, contradict his Will? Far be it from me. Yea, I come willingly, my GOD. Only have Mercy on me, and cleanse me from my Sins, that no Spot or Wrinkle may appear in me; but that I may be pure in thy Sight. And so he lifted up himself full of Sighs, yet full of Hope, and as he was praying, render'd up his Spirit unto GOD.

THEN was *Jessenius*, a Doctor of Physick, called forth, a Man famous for Piety and Learning all over Europe. Having heard his Sentence, he said: You use us cruelly and disgracefully; but know, that our Heads shall be buried, which you ignominiously expose for a Spectacle. This afterwards came to pass, in 1631, when the King of Sweden with his Army took Prague, and caused the Martyrs Heads to be taken from the Tower, and solemnly and honourably buried. When the Hangman required his Tongue to cut it off, he willingly put it out, and

and falling upon his Knees, as he was praying, his Head was cut off, and his Body afterwards quartered and set upon four Stakes.

THE next was *Christopher Chober*, who much encouraged his Fellow-Martyrs, and then cited the Words of *Ignatius*: *I am GOD's Corn, and shall be ground with the Teeth of Wild Beasts.* So we (saith he) are *GOD's Corn*, sown in the Field of the Church; and that we may be for our Master's Use, we are now to be torn by Beasts. But be of good Cheer, the Church is founded in Blood, and hath ever increased by Blood. GOD is able to raise up a Thousand Work-shippers of Himself out of every Drop of our Blood. For though Truth now suffers Violence, yet Christ reigns, and no Man shall throw Him from his Throne. Being called to Execution, he said: *I come in the Name of my GOD; neither am I ashamed to suffer these Things for his Glory, for I know in whom I have believed. I have fought the good Fight of Faith, and finished my Course.* Then praying, *Into thy Hands, LORD, I commend my Spirit*, he received the Crown of Martyrdom.

JOHN SHULTIS was next, who said on the Scaffold, *Why art thou so sad, O my Soul? Hope thou in GOD for thou shalt yet praise him. The Righteous seem to die in the Eyes of Fools, but indeed they go to their Rest.* LORD Jesus, Thou hast promised that whoso comes to Thee, Thou wilt not cast off. Behold I now come! look on me! pity me! pardon my Sins, and receive my Soul to Thy self! Then kneeling down, he said: *Come! come, LORD Jesus! and do not tarry!* and so he was Beheaded.

THE next was *Maximilian Hostalic*, a learned and pious Man. After his Condemnation he was sadder than the rest; and being asked by the Minister the Reason of it, he said; *The Sins of my Youth*

now come into my Mind. For though I know, that nothing remains to condemn me, which am in Christ Jesus; yet I know that GOD exerciseth Justice, as well as Mercy, towards his own. Being called to Death, he said; *Look upon me, O LORD, my GOD, and enlighten mine Eyes, lest I sleep the Sleep of Death; and lest mine Enemies say, we have prevailed.* Afterward repeating the Words of Simeon, *Now let thy Servant depart in Peace; for mine Eyes have seen thy Salvation,* he was Beheaded.

THE next was John Kutnaur, who, when the Jesuits began to speak to them, said; *Pray you, trouble not our Consciences; we are sufficiently furnished against the Fear of Death; we need none of your Help.* And when they would have proceeded, he said; *Why do you create unprofitable Labour to yourselves, and Trouble to us?* Upon their saying one to another, *They are hard Rocks, and will not suffer themselves to be removed:* He answered; *You say true. Christ is an hard Rock, and we are firmly fixed on Him.* Afterwards he said to his Fellow Martyrs: *I understand that I must be hanged; but whether by the Neck, Middle or Feet, I neither know, nor care. This only is my Grief, that my Blood may not be mingled with yours, that we might be made one Sacrifice to GOD.* When he was called forth to Execution, he was besprinkled with the Tears of his Friends, to whom he said: *Play the Men, Brethren, and refrain from Weeping. I go before, but it is but a short Time and we shall meet in heavenly Glory.* When he was upon the Ladder, he said: *I have plotted no Treason, committed no Murder, I have done nothing worthy of Death; but I die because I have been faithful to the Gospel, and my Country. O GOD pardon mine Enemies, for they know not what they do. But thou, O Christ, have Pity on me, for I commit my Soul unto thee.*

THE next was *Simeon Suffickey*, who, when he saw the *Jesuits* coming, said to his Companions; *These Birds of Prey are flying hither, but they shall not feed on these Carcasses, but return hungry; For GOD hath promised to preserve his own as the Apple of his Eye, and therefore He will not suffer us to be seduced.* The last Night he had a great Conflict with the Flesh, because the Scripture saith; *Cursed is every one that hangeth on a Tree.* But when the Minister told him, that that Curse was taken away by the Death of *Christ*, he was well satisfied.

THE next was *Nathaniel Wodnianskey*, who, when the *Jesuits* solicited him to Apostacy, said to them; *You take away our Lives under Pretence of Rebellion, and not content with that, you seek to destroy our Souls. Glut your selves with the Sight of our Blood, and be satisfied with that; but we shall leave a Sting in your Consciences.* Afterwards his own Son saying to him, *My Father, if Hope of Life should be proffered to you, upon Condition of Apostacy, I pray you be mindful of keeping your Faith to Christ;* he answered; *It is very acceptable to me, my Son, to be exhorted to Constancy by you; but what makes you suspect me? I rather advise and exhort you to follow your Father's Steps, and to exhort your Brethren, Sisters, and Children, to that Constancy whereof I shall leave you an Example; and so he patiently ended his Life.*

THE next was *Wenceslaus Gisbitzky*, to whom were given great Hopes of his Life. The Minister fearing Satan's Stratagems, advised him to take heed of Security and prepare himself for Death. Upon the Scaffold he fell on his Knees, and said; *We prostrate before Thee, O Eternal Father, do not forsake us. Have Pity on us, through Jesus Christ. We would say more, but we are not able to express it.*

Into

Into thy Hands do we commend our Souls; perfect that which Thou hast begun to work in us. Render to us our Inheritance, that we may sing, Holy, Holy, Holy LORD, GOD of Hosts: And so in the Midst of his Prayers he ended his Life.

AFTER the Execution of these holy Martyrs, all their Goods were confiscated, as also of those that were driven into Banishment. Then was a Proclamation published, wherein a general Pardon of all Crimes was offered to all the Inhabitants of the Kingdom; only their Goods were confiscated, either in whole or in Part, which must be brought into his Majesty's Treasury, to pay his Debts, contracted in this necessary War. Besides which they were to make a Confession of their Faults in a Form, prescribed before Cardinal *Lichtenstein*, who was *Cæsar's* Viceroy; and if any did not appear he should loose this Favour.

Hence it was that the Enemies publicly boasted, that none were punished but such as were convicted by their own Confession. Then by an Edict all were forbidden to diminish, or waste their Goods, by selling them, or conveying them over to others; and if any Man should send away his Goods to another Place, all should be lost; and whosoever received such Goods, should pay so much of his own to the Emperor.

THEN they proceeded to take from the *Protestants* all their Castles, Towns, and Villages, whereby they were deprived of their Livelihoods, and driven into strange Places. Some were forced to cast themselves upon their Popish Friends; others to become Servants to their Destroyers.

AFTERWARDS all their personal Estates were sequester'd; scarce so much as a Garment being left them

them, wherewith to cover their Nakedness. And lest any Man should have Money at Use, they commanded all to bring in all their Bonds, without concealing the least, upon Pain of loosing all their Debts. And when any considerable Sum was brought in, the King's Treasurers were at Hand, who, protesting that the Emperor had need of it to defray the Charges of the War, took it away, giving the Party a Note, that so much was due to him from the Emperor, which yet was never repayed.

THUS the Protestants being commanded to depart the Kingdom, the Popish Party divided their Goods and Lands amongst themselves; and as it lay commodious for any of them, they added this or that Village, Town, Castle, or Lordship to their own; but the greatest Part fell to Strangers Shares, *Spaniards, Italians, or Germans*, which were Commanders in the Imperial Army, instead of their Pay. If any Widows or Orphans had Lands or Goods not taken from them, their Popish Neighbours would either circumvent them by Craft, or weary them out by quartering Soldiers upon them, and so forced them to sell their Lands, at what Prices themselves listed, neither did they pay that.

THEN the Emperor called for the ancient Characters of the Kingdom, which he immediately rent, and threw into the Fire.

MOST of the Ministers were banished; yet the noble Lord *Charles de Zerotine* did not only retain his household Chaplain, but also sustained many others privately in their Caves with Bread and Water; and fearing no Man, he not only gave Liberty to his own Subjects, but to divers others in neighbouring Places to resort to the holy Exercises performed in his Castle.

HERE-

HEREUPON the Enemies by a new Edict published, that all such Barons, Noblemen, and Citizens, as kept any Protestant Tutor for their Children, should presently dismiss him; otherwise he should be taken and punished. Also by another Edict all the *Protestants* were cast out of Protection of the Laws, and were to have no Benefit by them.

THE Enemies, being every Day puffed up with their Successes and Victories, made a Decree, That all Protestant Noblemen should depart out of the Kingdom; and the Emperor published a Proclamation, That, to prevent all Divisions which were dangerous to the Kingdom and Magistrates, he was resolved no longer to tolerate any of the inferior, much less of the superior Estates of either Sex, who was infected with heretical Errors; And withal, he granted to the superior States the Term of six Months, wherein to learn the *Roman Catholick* Faith. For that End he appointed Commissioners of Reformation to instruct them, requiring them to be obedient to his Will, and to be diligently instructed by them; otherwise they should not be suffered to stay in the Kingdom, much less to possess their Goods; and therefore he required all those which, at the End of the Term of six Months, did not turn *Catholicks*, immediately to depart the Kingdom, and never to return.

HEREUPON they which heartily loved Religion, presently separated themselves by Banishment. Others solicited *Cæsar* by Petitions, either to change the Decree, or to grant them a longer Time. Others there were, that thinking to deceive the Emperor and Pope, bought false Testimonies of the Priests, that they had made a Confession, and communicated in one Kind, and so made Shew of a dissembled Apostacy, thereby to avoid Banishment.

THEN was the forenamed Act extended to Widows, and the *Protestant's* Children were commanded to be delivered to the Care and Instructions of *Catholicks*, or else to be shut up in Monasteries. This caused extream Grief and Groans, when Noble-Mens Sons and Daughters, even Maids that were marriageable, were pulled from their Parents, and Friends, and thrust into *Jesuits* Colleges, or *Monks* Cells; their Goods being also taken from them, and committed to Papists.

By the cunning Craftiness of those seducing Reformers, many unwary Persons were deceived, who told them, that they might hold their former Opinions; only for Order Sake they must acknowledge the *Roman* Bishops to be the visible Head of the Church. Hereby the simpler Sort, thinking that they were not constrained to any other Faith, but what they had formerly learned, thought they might with a safe Conscience, promise that outward Obedience. And if these Seducers saw any one of more Nobility than ordinary, they presently suggested to them, how much it grieved *Cesar*, that those ancient Families, which had formerly been the Ornaments and Props of the Kingdom, should cast themselves out into Banishment through their Unadvisedness, when they might remain and flourish under the Favour both of God and *Cesar*. This ruined many of the Protestant Nobility, who preferr'd their earthly, before the heavenly Country.

YET about a hundred Families, leaving their Inheritances, and all their Possessions, went away. Amongst these was the Lord *de Zerotine*, who rather chose to suffer Affliction with the People of God, than to enjoy his earthly Possessions.

MANY of these *Protestants* being gone into *Silesia*, and *Lusatia*, the Emperor sent forth a Proclamation, that they should depart from thence,

or be brought to Punishment; requiring them likewise to send back their Children, which they had carried with them, upon Penalty of loosing all the Goods, which any of them could demand in his Country.

SOON after he published another Edict, wherein he required all the *Protestant* Wives of the *Catholicks*, either to reform, or go into Banishment. But as many of the chief Officers of the Kingdom had *Protestant* Wives, and would not endure, that they should be thus divorced from them, he set forth another Edict, whereby they were tolerated 'till the Death of their Husbands, and then they should be excluded of their Inheritances, and sent into Banishment: And required in the mean Time they should absent themselves from all festival and nuptial Solemnities, or else should take the lowest Places after the *Catholicks*.

SOME of the Protestants who had fled, privately returned, and others stay'd to make the best of that little Substance they had left. Proclamation was therefore sent out that all such should be apprehended and imprisoned: And all such as had harbour'd any of them, were warned upon Allegiance, to appear before the chief Officers in the Castle of *Prague*: and it was required that if any knew were any of them lay hid, they should secretly and suddenly attack them, and bring them to Prison.

THEN the Emperor repealed, and disannulled divers of the ancient Statutes of the Kingdom, that made most for the People's Liberties; as concerning their free Election of a King, and the like, that he might the better oppress them.

THEN all the free Citizens of mean Quality were appointed to determine all Businesses, and to

be the chief Officers; and to those were added some of the chief of the Soldiery, the better to procure Subjection,

THEY also impoverished these Cities by Taxes and Contributions; which continued divers Years, and were extorted by the Soldiers Power.

AFTER the taking of the City of *Prague*, *Papists* were examined upon Oath to declare what they knew or heard that the *Protestants* had spoken or done against *Cæsar*. Then an Act was published to the rest of the Citizens, that though they had forfeited their whole Estates, yet they should not be wholly sequestred, but every one should contribute Part of his Estate to support the Army. All Men also were required upon Oath to discover what their Estates were; according to which they were enjoined to pay a Ransom. Yea, all Trading was inhibited to such as were not *Catholicks*.

IN the City of *Kuttenburg* were Abundance of Silver Mines, and the Inhabitants generally were zealous Professors. Hereupon as soon as they began to be molested for Religion, the King's Revenue began to diminish, most of the Workmen giving over the Work. The King seeing this, farmed his Revenues to the Citizens for ten Years, promising under his Hand and Seal, that in the Interim they should not be troubled with Soldiers, nor for their Religion. But Satan envying their Place and Liberties, stirred up the *Jesuits*, to move the King to break his Covenant within four Months after. Then the Soldiers were sent thither again, and they began again to be questioned about their Religion. The Citizens astonished at this manifest Breach of Covenant, humbly petitioned that no Violence might be offered them, which would overthrow the Metal-Works. Instead of an Answer,

the Mayor and chief Aldermen had twenty Musqueteers apiece put into their Houses upon free Quarter. The Soldiers domineered exceedingly, wasting these Mens Estates by their Profusenefs, and abusing them divers other Ways at their Pleasure; yet the Patience of the one overcame the tyrannical Behaviour of the other. These godly Men provided for the Soldiers as long as they could; but when all was gone, some of them withdrew themselves from Danger by Flight; others resigned their Houses and Goods, and delivering the Keys to them, departed.

WHEN this prevailed not, the Task of reforming that City was committed to *Don Martin*, who, accompanied with a Troop of *Curassiers*, and himself brandishing a naked Sword, entered into the City. The Citizens trembled at his coming, having heard of his Cruelty at other Places; whereupon, that very Night, Multitudes of them betook themselves to Flight, thinking to hide themselves in neighbouring Villages. This caused *Don Martin* to get an Edict, That none should harbour Exiles, upon a great Penalty.

THE Year after, a Senate at *Kuttenburg* was elected out of the Apostates. The Mayor being a base and illiterate Person, all the Citizens were still oppressed with Soldiers, so that they either fled with their Wives and Children, leaving all behind them; or else were fain to submit their Necks to the Antichristian Yoke.

The next City whether these Reformers went, was *Bolislavia*, where the Orthodox Religion had continued for 200 Years, and it was the Principal Seat of *The Brethren*. There they ejected their Ministers, and placed in their Rooms two crafty Friars, who by all Means sought to pervert the

People,

People; but when this prevailed not, they brought in three Companies of Soldiers to quarter upon them. Then some of the Citizens were banished; others cast into Prison; and three of the Principal were sequestred, to strike a Terror to the rest. When the Citizens still remained constant, they were all warned to appear in the Court. Being come thither, they were all shut up in Rooms, and called out one by one. The first was the Town-Clerk, a weak and timorous Man. They had set a Russian in a Corner, with a Sword in his Hand to meet him, whom the fearful Man seeing, he was so terrified, that he promised to turn *Catholic*. They so rejoiced at this Beginning, that they dismissed all the rest, only bidding them consider of it, and do after the Town-Clerk's Example.

AMONG these there were two Burgo-Masters, learned Men, who exhorted their Fellow Citizens not to be affrighted with these Terrors.

AFTERWARDS one of them being called for, was partly with Threats, and partly with Flatteries so wearied out, that at last he took some Time to consider of it. The other being called for, and an old Man proposing the other's Example to him, he spit in his Face, saying, *Traytor is this your Constancy?* And so both he, and the rest of the Citizens remained unmoveable as a Rock. The first Burgo-Master, considering what he had done, and being ashamed of it, came and gave them such a positive Answer, that he was sent to Prison with the rest.

In the City of *Litomericia*, in 1517, there was an unanimous Agreement amongst the Citizens, that none should be made free amongst them, but such as professed the reformed Religion. This continued inviolate for a hundred Years; when two *Jesu-*

its, suing to be made Free-Men of the City, and being denied, entred their Complaint in the *Chancery*. Then some of the principal Aldermen were summon'd to the Court and kept for nine Weeks; 'till by Threats they had forced them to make these two Men free. Five Months after, one of them was made an Alderman, that so they might have their Spies in every Place. There was also cunning Seducers sent thither to withdraw the People from their Religion.

WHEN this prevailed not, in 1525, they took the Names of every Citizen; commanding them constantly to go to Mass; or else for every Omision they should forfeit five Pounds.

THEN bringing in more Soldiers, they commanded all the Inhabitants to be present at the idolatrous Procession; and because the Recorder came not, they sent a whole Company of Soldiers to plunder his House, who also abused and threaten'd his Wife.

THE Year after they brought in more Soldiers, quartering them in the principal Mens Houses, in some Ten, in some Twenty, and in others Thirty, who abused them fearfully; but, through God's Assistance, they bore it with such admirable Patience that the Enemies were weary of plaguing them, and began to be more moderate. However they published an Order, that whosoever would not turn *Catholick*, should, with their Wives and Children, depart the City and Kingdom by a certain Day; whereupon many of them removed into *Misnia*.

DON MARTIN went also to *Bidfove*, ten Miles from *Prague*, attended with his Soldiers, and assembling the Citizens, he made an Oration to them to turn *Catholicks*. They answered: *That*
they

they could not unlearn that in an Hour, which they had been learning all their Life. This so enraged *Martin*, that he assaulted the Man that answered for all the rest, with a Club, beating him extremely, and then commanded the Officer to carry him out of the City, not suffering him so much as to visit his House before his Departure. This so terrified the rest, that they promised to be taught within a certain Time. There were some who thought to save themselves by Flight. These sent their Wives and some of their Goods privately before, with whom went also some godly Widows. *Martin* having Intelligence of it, sent some Soldiers after them, that stript them of their Goods, and brought the Women back and cast them into Fetters, refusing to release them, 'till both they and their Husbands turned *Catholicks*.

AT *Tusta*, a chief Officer of the Kingdom solicited the Citizens to turn *Catholicks*, which they refusing to do, he complained of it to the *Jesuits* at *Prague*. Upon this, *Don Martin* was sent thither, who entering the City, sent his Soldiers into the Senators Houses, licencing them to abuse them at their Pleasure; so that in a short Time, many were forced to Apostacy. Then that other Officer set a great Fine upon the City, because they turned *Catholicks* for another Man's Sake, and would not for his. Thus the poor Protestants were abused on every Hand to satisfy the Lusts of these Tyrants.

THEN another Noble-man with a Band of Soldiers, went to the City of *Rokizan*, and Tyrannically abused the People for their Religion; forbearing no kind of Insolency that they could think of. Amongst other Projects, this was one; He caused all the Citizens to write their Names in three Books; in the first, such as were already *Catholicks*, (which were but six Apostates;) in the second,

cond, such as would become Apostates within a Fortnight, which were very few: In the third, such as absolutely refused, and so were accounted opposite to God and *Cæsar*; and in this were almost all the Names; which so enraged him, that he resolved to use all Manner of Cruelties, saying: That *they deserved the Cross, the Wheel, yea, and Hell it self.*

THEN he commanded all the Citizens to come to the Church the next Day, to receive the Sacrament in one Kind. When he came to Church, he found few or none there. Then he ran through the Streets, and into the Houses, driving all that he met with to the Church with his Stick. When he came thither again, he espied one *John Felix*, a chief Citizen, but a *Calvinist*; he therefore fell upon him with a knotty Club, beating him about the Head, Shoulders and Hands, till he was all in Gore Blood; and then he said to him: *Get thee hence thou Beast, with thy cursed Calvin-Blood.* Then he raged against the other Citizens, cursing them, beating some, and spitting in the Faces of others. From one of the grave Citizens, he pulled off his Beard; and strewed it on the Floor.

AFTER this, he again sent Word to *Felix*, that except he changed his Mind by the Morrow, he would act a new Tragedy with him; but that Night he escaped, leaving behind him his dear Wife and Children, and an aged Mother, Eighty Years old. Then the Earl imprisoned his Wife, and sequestred his Estate, and forced the rest of the Citizens to subscribe, that they freely, and with all Readiness of Mind, embraced the *Catholick Religion.*

THEY entred the City of *Prachatice* by Force, and slew the Mayor, who was bringing them the Keys, together with 1600 Men, Women, and Chil-

Children, sparing none but such as fled, or hid themselves in secret Places. The Carcasses they left unburied for several Days, all dirty, and shamefully naked. Afterwards when the City began again to be inhabited, the Commissioners of Reformation came thither, promising them, that if they would turn *Catholicks*, they should have their Liberties restored to them; but if they refused, they should be restrained from all Trading. When this prevailed not, they thrust Men and Women, Young and Old into Prisons, where they miserably afflicted them for four Months together.

THEY used the like Cruelty to all other Cities, where they practised all Manner of Impositions, Deceits, Tyrannies, and impudent Practices, till they had rooted out the reformed Religion, and set up their idolatrous and superstitious Worship instead of it.

THEN came out an Edict, that whosoever refused to turn *Papist*, whether Men or Women, Young or Old, Bond or Free, their Names should be returned to the Council of State, who would give Instructions what should be done with their Persons and Estates.

MARRIAGE, Burial and Baptism were forbidden to the *Protestants*, and if any did it privately, they were Imprisoned, and not dismissed without Apostacy, or a great Fine. Then all Trading and Means of getting of their Living, was inhibited, and at last, Buying of Food, so that the poor People being oppressed with Hunger and Want, were either forced to fly, or Apostatize.

THEY fetched the Country-men out of their Houses, yea, out of their Beds, by Troops of Soldiers,

Soldiers, driving them like Beasts before them in the sharpest Cold, and filled the common Prisons, Towers, Cellars, Stables, yea, and Hog-sties with them; where they were killed with Hunger, Cold and Thirst.

In some Places they made Holes, and knocked them full of Iron Spikes, wherein those that were shut, could neither sit nor stand, but bending and crooked. It was not possible that any Man could endure this Posture above two or three Hours; their Sinews all this While trembling, their Members quivering, and their Hearts ready to faint with Anguish, so that some were forced to promise to turn *Catholicks*; others that refused, were brought back to Torture.

WHEN they desired to die, rather then forsake their Religion, it was answered: *That the Emperor thirsted not after their Blood, but rather after the Welfare of their Souls.* To others, they said: *Oh, you affect the Glory of Martyrdom! but you are base Knaves, and are unworthy to have any Thing to glory in.*

THERE were many who would have died in the Maintainance of the Christian Faith, but there were none that would inflict Death upon them. For these cruel Tyrants, brought up in the *Devil's* School, would not kill the Body but the Soul, and therefore they sought by lingring and continual Punishments to bring them first to Stagger, and then to deny the Truth.

In some Places they shut up the People in the Church, and forc'd them to receive the Sacrament in one Kind; and if they would not fall down to the Host, they us'd to beat their Legs with Clubs,
'till

'till they fell down. Some they imprison'd and rack'd several Times, to force them to a Confession. They set open the Mouths of others with Gags, and thrust the Host down their Throats. In other Places they forc'd the People, not only to abjure the Cup, but to throw it down, and to spit upon it, and to tread it under Foot.

If any to avoid this Tyranny, fled into the Woods, and secret Places, Hunger drove them out again, whereby they became a Prey to their Adversaries. If they went to neighbouring Places, some or other would betray them.

EDICTS were also publish'd, forbidding all to entertain such as fled, upon Pain of forfeiting a Hundred Pieces of Silver for every Night's Entertainment. Yet these miserable People could not go out of the Kingdom, not being acquainted with any other Language. Besides, they were told that ere long the like Tragedy should be acted every where.

FOUR Men of *Koffenburg* continuing constant after long Imprisonment, they were first expos'd to the Cold, for five Weeks together, in the Depth of Winter. Then for nine Days they were pined with Hunger, having only a small Portion of Bread to keep them alive; and being forc'd to drink their own Urine. When they were threaten'd with harder Usage, if they did not turn, they answer'd: *We willingly embrace all Afflictions, Famine, Hanging, Burning, or any Thing, rather than we would sin against God.* Thereupon, only a Mouthfull of Bread, and a Draught of Water, were given them twice a Week. Then they were parted asunder; and one of them was thrust into the Sink of the Prison, another into a Furnace, and none permitted

ted to visit them; and when nothing would prevail, they set a Fine upon them, and banish'd them.

SOME were kept in Prison and Bonds 'till they died. One was kept in a filthy Prison 'till his Feet rotted off; and yet he passed away the Time with Singing of Psalms, as if he enjoy'd all Manner of Delights.

A CERTAIN Man, being tired out with Imprisonment, was releas'd, upon his Promise of turning *Catholick*. Immediately after this, (as himself wrote) GOD chasten'd him for his Fault, holding his Conscience Captive for an whole Year together, so that he could have no Hope in GOD's Mercy. All this While, he cry'd unto GOD Night and Day, watering his Bed with Tears, because he thought himself damn'd. At last GOD (saith he) sent his Angel to me, and I saw his Glory brighter than the Sun, and I had GOD's Spirit bestowed upon me. After this he was apprehended, beheaded, and quarter'd.

WHEN Pope *Martin* perceiv'd, that notwithstanding all that had been done to quench the Light of the Gospel, the Professors of it increas'd daily in *Bohemia*, he sent the Cardinal of *Winchester*, an *Englishman*, into *Germany*, to stir up the Emperor and German Princes to make War against the *Bohemians*. Hereupon three Armies were levy'd, one under the Duke of *Saxony*; the Second under the Marquess of *Brandenburg*; and the Third under *Otho*, Archbishop of *Triers*. These three Armies enter'd *Bohemia* three different Ways, and at last joining all in one, besieg'd the City of *Misna*, which, but the Night before, was won from the Papists by one *Prichich*, a learn'd and zealous Protestant; and therefore the Popish Armies resolv'd to take that Place before they march'd any further.

But as soon as News came, That the Protestants had rais'd an Army, and were hastening to the Relief of *Misna*, they speedily fled, before ever they saw an Army, leaving their Ensigns of War, and a great Booty behind them.

THE Cardinal meeting them in their Flight, used all the Arguments that possibly he could, with the Nobles and Captains, to turn them back again, magnifying their Number and Prowess, and vilifying their Enemies; but when nothing would prevail, he himself was fain to accompany them in the Flight. Presently the *Bohemians* pursuing, fell upon their Rear-ward, which made their Flight much more fearfull and disorder'd than it was before; neither did they leave flying, 'till the *Bohemians* left pursuing them.

THE Emperor, hearing of this shamefull Flight, went to *Nuremberg*, and by the Assistance of the Cardinal, a new Army was rais'd under the Command of *Frederick*, Marquess of *Brandenburg*, which enter'd *Bohemia* one Way, and another great Army under *Albert*, Archduke of *Austria*, which enter'd another Way. All the chiefeft Nobles and Bishops in *Germany*, were in these Armies, with 40,000 Horsemen, besides Foot.

THE *Bohemians*, as soon as they heard of their Enemy's Approach, gather'd their Host with all Speed, to encounter them, but GOD fought for them. For before the *Bohemians* came near them, the Popish Army was struck with such a marvellous Fear, that they began most shamefully to run away. The Cardinal wondering at it, went up and down to the Captains, exhorting and encouraging them, telling them, That they were to fight for their Lives, Honour, Religion, and the Salva-

Salvation of Souls. But notwithstanding all he could say and do, the Ensigns were suddenly snatch'd up, and every Man ran head-long away, so that the Cardinal was forc'd to do the like. The Protestants encourag'd hereby, speedily pursu'd them, and obtain'd a very great Booty. This so astonish'd both the Pope and Emperor, that afterwards they sought rather by Subtilty to entrap them, than by Force to compell them, to forsake their Religion.

6 JY. 64



THE



THE
PERSECUTION
OF THE
CHURCH of GOD
IN
France,

Which began in the Year 1524.

IN the Year 1209, there were certain learned Men in *France*, Disciples of one *Almeric*, at *Paris*, who, upon Examination, was found to hold: *That GOD was no otherwise present in the Sacramental Bread, than in any other: That it was Idolatry to build Altars to Saints, or to worship their Images: That the Pope was Antichrist, and Rome*
VOL. VI. M Babylon:

Babylon: *That God was not seen in Himself, but by his Creatures.* When they could not be drawn to recant these Tenets, they were condemn'd to be burnt at *Paris*; which was accordingly executed. The Body of their Master was digg'd up out of the Church-yard, and bury'd in the Field.

IN 1524, At *Melden*, in *France*, there was one *John Clark*, who set up a Bill upon the Church-door, against the Pope's Pardons, lately come thither; wherein he call'd the Pope Antichrist. For this he was apprehended, and adjudg'd to be whipt three several Days, and then to have a Mark burnt in his Forehead, as a Note of Infamy. His Mother, a good Woman, when she saw her Son so scourged and branded, encourag'd him, crying with a loud Voice: *Blessed be Christ, and welcome be these Marks for his Sake.* Afterwards he remov'd from thence, and remov'd to *Metz*, in *Lorraine*, where for some Time he follow'd the Calling of a Wool-carder. All the People of this City used, once a Year, to go forth into the Suburbs, to worship some Idols there. *John Clark*, inflamed with Zeal, went the Night before, and broke down all those Images. The next Morning, when all the Clergy and People came to the Place to worship them, they found all their Idols broken upon the Ground. This set all in a Tumult, and there was great Searching after the Author of this Deed. *John Clark* was quickly suspected and apprehended; who, at once confess'd the Fact, and told them the Reasons why he did it.

THE People hereupon cry'd out against him, in a great Rage. He profess'd the pure Doctrine of the Son of GOD before the Judges; and therefore was condemn'd to a cruel Death, which he sustain'd with admirable Patience and Constancy.

NOT

NOT long after, Mr. *John Castellane*, Doctor in Divinity, born at *Tournay*, being through GOD's Mercy, call'd to the Knowledge of the Truth, became a zealous, fervent, and faithfull Preacher of it in divers Places. At last he was taken Prisoner by the Cardinal of *Lorraine's* Servants, by whom he was carry'd to the Castle of *Nommeny*, where he endur'd much Cruelty; yet still he persever'd in confessing the true Doctrine of the SON of GOD. Then he was carry'd to the Castle of *Vic*, and after some Time was condemn'd, degraded, and deliver'd over to the Secular Power, with this Speech: *My Lord Judge, we pray you as heartily as we can, for the Love of GOD, and the Contemplation of tender Pity and Mercy, and for Respect to our Prayers, That you will not in any Point do any Thing, that shall be hurtful to this miserable Man, or tending to his Death, or the Maiming of his Body.* He was afterwards burnt alive; which Death he underwent with Patience and Comfort.

IN the Year 1540, One *Claudius*, endeavouring to convert his Friends and Kinsfolk in *Paris*, was betray'd by them, and adjudg'd to have his Tongue cut out, and then burnt.

STEPHEN BRUNE, at *Rutiers*, for the constant Profession of his Faith, was condemn'd to be burnt. When the Fire was kindled, a great Wind so drove the Flame from him, that he stood for an Hour, exhorting and instructing the People. Then they brought Oil, Vessels, and more Faggots, yet still the Flame was driven from him. Whereupon the Hangman, thrust him through the Belly with a Pike, threw him down into the Fire, and after he was burnt, scatter'd his Ashes in the Wind.

AT *Roan* four Christians were condemn'd to be burnt, and being carry'd to the Stake in a Dung-

cart, they said: *Blessed be GOD, we are here reputed as the Excrements of this World, but yet our Death is a sweet Savour unto GOD.*

IN 1549, there was a Minister, called *Florent Venote*, cast into Prison at *Paris*, where he lay above four Years, in which Time there was no kind of Torment, which he did not endure and overcome. Amongst other Tortures, he was put into so narrow a Place, that he could neither stand nor lie. He remained there seven Weeks, whereas there was never any Malefactor before that could endure it fifteen Days, but he either grew Mad or died. At last when a great Shew was made at the King's coming into the City, and divers other Martyrs in sundry Places of it were put to Death; *Florent* also, having his Tongue cut out, was brought forth to see their Execution, and lastly was himself burnt.

ABOUT the same Time, one *Anne Audebert*, as she was going to *Geneva*, was apprehended and brought to *Paris*, where she was adjudged to be sent to *Orleans* and burned there. When she was had forth to Execution, a Rope being put about her, she called it her Wedding-Girdle, wherewith she should be married to *Christ*. Being to be burned on a *Saturday*, she said: *On a Saturday I was first Married, and on a Saturday I shall be Married again.* She rejoiced much when she was put into the Dung-Cart, and shewed such Patience and Constancy in the Fire, as made all the Spectators wonder.

IN 1553, three godly Men were apprehended at *Lyons*, and condemned for the Truth. When they were led forth to Execution, two of them had Ropes put about their Necks. The third, having served the King in his Wars, was favoured to have
none

none: Whereupon he said to the Lieutenant: *I also desire to have one of these precious Chains about my Neck in Honour of my LORD.* This being granted, they all went Singing to the Fire, where with much Patience, they yielded up their Spirits unto GOD.

NOT long after, one *Matthew Dimonet* was apprehended in the same Place. He formerly had lived a most wicked Life, full of all Filthiness and Abominations. He had been also a Searcher out of the Professors of the Gospel, and a great Persecuter of them; yet at last it pleased GOD to shew him Mercy, and he was converted to the Knowledge of the Truth. Being apprehended and examined, he made a stout Profession of his Faith. During his Imprisonment, he had great Conflicts with the Infirmary of his Flesh, but especially with the Temptations of his Parents, Kindred, and Friends; yet the LORD so strengthened him, that he endured Constant to the End. At his Burning he spake much to the People, and was hearken'd to with great Attention.

SIMON LALOE, coming upon some Occasions from *Geneva* into *France*, was apprehended by the Bailiff of *Dyon*, and by him Imprisoned and Rack'd to force him to confess what Fellows he had: But that not prevailing, he was condemned to be burned. At his Death, the Executioner seeing his Faith, Patience, and Constancy, was so wrought upon thereby, that he fell into great Terrors of Conscience; so that he was near to utter Despair, and all the Promises of the Gospel could scarce comfort him. At last, through GOD's Mercy, receiving Comfort, he with all his Family removed to the Church of *Geneva*, where he afterwards lived till his Death.

NICHOLAS NAILE, carrying some good Books to *Paris*, was there apprehended, and made a bold Confession of the Faith, for which he was cruelly tormented, and all his Joints racked asunder. Being condemned, he was carried to the Stake, where they put a Gag into his Mouth, which they tied in so hard with a Rope about his Head, that Blood gushed out of his Mouth. They also besmeared all his Body with Oil and Brimstone, so that at the first taking of Fire, all his Skin was shrivelled together, whilst his inward Parts were untouched. The Cord being burnt a-sunder, and the Gag falling out of his Mouth, he praised God in the Midst of the Fire, till he yielded up his Spirit unto Him.

PETER SERRE was at first a Priest, but God of his Mercy revealing his Truth to him, he went to *Geneva*, and there learned the Shoe-maker's Craft, whereby he maintained himself. Having a Brother at *Tholouse*, he went thither to instruct him out of a singular Love to his Soul. His Brother's Wife not being well pleased herewith, revealed it to one of her Companions, who informed the Official against him. Hereupon he was apprehended and carried before the Inquisitor, to whom he made an excellent Declaration of his Faith, and so was delivered to the Judge. The Judge who asked him of what Occupation he was? He said: *I am of late a Shoe-maker.* Then the Judge ask'd him of what Occupation he had formerly been? He said: *I am ashamed to utter it, or to remember it; it being the worst and vilest Science of all others in the World.* The Judge and People supposing, that he had been some Cut-purse or Thief, were more importunate to know what it was; but Shame and Sorrow so stopped his Mouth, that he could not declare it. At last, through their importunate Clamour, he told them, he had been a
Papist

Papish Priest. This so incensed the Judge, that he presently condemned him to be Degraded, to have his Tongue cut out, and to be Burned; which was accordingly executed. In the Fire he stood as quiet, looking up stedfastly to Heaven at the Time of his Burning, as if he felt no Pain at all. This caused wonderful Admiration in the People; and one of the Parliament said: *It is not the best Way to bring the Lutherans to the Fire, for it will do more Hurt than Good.*

IN 1558, *Nicholas of Jonville*, a young Man, that had lived at *Geneva*, coming into *France* to get up some Money that was owing to him, was betrayed, apprehended and condemned. Being carried in a Cart to Execution, his Father met him, and would have beaten him with a Staff, but the Officers not suffering it, were about to have stricken the old Man. The Son seeing it, cried to them to let his Father alone, saying: That he had Power over him to do to him what he would. At the Place of Execution he had an Iron Ball put into his Mouth; and so he patiently took his Martyrdom at *Jonville*.

IN 1559. *Henry II.* King of *France* coming into the Parliament at *Paris*, there was one *Anne du Bourg*, (a noble Counsellor, a Man of singular Understanding and Knowledge, and bred up in the Bosom of the Church of *Christ*,) who made a bold Speech before him, wherein he rendered Thanks to Almighty God, for moving the King's Heart to be present at the Decision of so weighty a Cause as that of Religion was; humbly intreating him to consider well thereof, seeing it was the Cause of *Christ* Himself, which of good Right ought to be maintained by Princes. But the King instead of hearkening to this good Advice, was so far incensed against him, that he caused him to be apprehended

ended by the Earl of *Montgomery*, Constable of *France*, and to be carried to Prison, protesting to him in these Words; *These Eyes of mine shall see thee burnt.* Presently after he sent a Commission to the Judges to make his Process..

DURING his Imprisonment, there was a godly Woman, who was a Prisoner in a Chamber just over against his, who, at her Window, sometimes by Words, at other Times by Signs, did much encourage him to persevere constantly in the Truth, whereby he was so comforted, that when some of his Friends perswaded him to recant, he said: *GOD forbid! For a Woman hath taught me my Lesson, how I ought to carry my self in thss Business.* He was often examined about sundry Points of Religion; and being once asked, Whether he had conferred with any about them, he answered; *That he had conferred with his Books; especially with the Holy Scriptures.*

HAVING drawn up a Confession of his Faith, he intended to present it to the Parliament; But some Advocates that belonged to the Court, who pretended to have a great Love to him, labour'd to draw him to make another Confession; not contrary to Truth; but in such ambiguous Terms, as might satisfy the Judges. *Du Bourg* long resisted, but at last was prevailed with to draw up such a Confession. As soon as this came into the Hands of his Judges, great Hopes were conceived of his Enlargement. But when the Christian Congregation had gotten a Copy of it, they were much grieved: whereupon they ordered Master *Augustine Marlorat*, a learned and godly Minister (who afterwards in 1562, together with three worthy Counsellors, was hang'd at *Roan*) to write a large Discourse concerning the Duty of such, as were called to bear Witness to the Truth of GOD before Magistrates;

gistrates; exhorting him more highly to prize the Glory of GOD, than his own Liberty; the Truth of his Gospel than a short and transitory Life; shewing that the Fame of his Constancy was spread, not only through *France*, but all *Christendom* over; That he had been a Means to confirm many weak Ones, and caused others to enquire after the Way of Salvation; that all Mens Eyes were fixed on him, so that if through Fear he should enterprize ought, that should contradict his first Profession, he would give much Scandal and Offence; and therefore he exhorted him to give Glory to GOD; telling him, that then he might assure himself, GOD would never leave nor forsake him.

THESE Letters brought *Du Bourg* to a Sight of his Sins, for which he ask'd Pardon of GOD, and without any further Delay wrote to the Judges, retracting his last, and protesting to stand to his first Confession; so that shortly after he was condemned.

IN the mean Time great Feasts were prepared in the Court, for Joy of the Marriages the King's Daughter and Sister, which were soon to be celebrated. The Day whereof being come, the King employed all the Morning in examining the President, and other Counsellors of the Parliament against *Du Bourg*, and other his Companions, that were charged with the same Doctrine: intending to glut his Eyes in seeing their Execution; and then went to Dinner.

AFTER Dinner, the King, (being one of the Defendants at the Tilting, which was near the Prison where *Du Bourg* and his Fellows lay,) enter'd the Lists, and behaved himself valiantly, breaking many Spears against Count *Montgomery* and others; whereupon he was highly commended of the Spectators;

tators; and all thinking that he had done enough, desired him to give over. But he, being puffed up with their Commendations, would needs run another Course with *Montgomery*, who, kneeling on his Knees, craved Pardon, refusing to run against him. The King being eagerly set on, commanded him on his Allegiance to run, and put the Spear into his Hand. *Montgomery*, thus enforced, addressed himself to the Course, and the King and he meeting, brake their Spears, and the King's Helmet falling down at the same Instant, one of the Splinters of *Montgomery's* Spear entered just into his right Eye, and so pierced his Head, that his Brains perished. This Wound, being incurable, killed him within eleven Days. Thus his Hope of seeing *Du Bourg* burned was frustrated. *Du Bourg's* Execution thereupon was deferr'd for six Months longer; when he, having constantly persever'd in the Confession of his Faith, was first degraded, and the next Day carried out to Execution. The Judges appoined six or seven hundred Horse and Foot well armed, to guard him. He was first hanged, and then his Body was burnt to Ashes.

THOSE of the *Religion*, (the Name whereby the *Protestants* were commonly known) seeing themselves destitute of all Human Aid, resolved in all their Dangers, instead of seeking to Man for Help, to pray to GOD, to hear his Word, to continue in true Obedience unto it. This they did, and by their living in great Love and Concord one with another, abundance of *Papists* were so edified, that whole Troops of them left the Mass, and made open Profession of the *Protestant Religion*.





THE
PERSECUTION

In the Time of the
Civil Wars.

IN 1562, the Duke of *Guise* passing towards *Paris*, and coming near to *Vassy*, heard a Bell which he understood rang to a Sermon, which was to be preached in a Barn, wherein were assembled about Twelve Hundred Men, Women, and Children. He went presently with all his Troops to the Barn, and entering it, cried out: *Death of God! kill, kill these Huguenots!* Then some of them shot at those, which were in the Galleries, others cut in Pieces such as they met with. Some had their Heads cleft in twain; others had their Arms and Hands cut off, so that the Walls and Galleries were died with Blood. The Duke, with his Sword drawn, stood amongst them, charging his Men to kill without sparing,
es-

especially the young Men. Some of these, getting upon the Roof, hid themselves there; but at length some of this Bloody Crew espying them, shot at them, whereby many of them were slain. Then they fell to Murdering all, without Distinction. Many Men and Women were slain. Others escaped being sore Wounded, but died shortly after. The Minister in the Beginning of the Massacre ceased not to preach, till one discharged his Piece against the Pulpit. Then falling upon his Knees, he intreated the LORD to have Mercy upon him, and upon his poor persecuted Flock; and so coming down from the Pulpit, attempted to escape; but by the Way he received divers Wounds. Finding himself as he thought, Mortally Hurt, he cried: LORD, *into Thy Hand I commend my Spirit, for Thou hast redeemed me, O LORD, thou GOD of Truth!* Before he was slain, some took him and carried him before the Duke, who said to him: *Who made thee so bold thus to seduce the People?* Sir, said the Minister, *I am no Seducer, but have faithfully preached the Gospel of Jesus Christ to them.* Then the Duke cursed and sware, saying: *Death of GOD! doth the Gospel teach Sedition?* He then called the Provost, saying: *Take this Varlet and hang him upon a Gibbet.* Then was he delivered to two Pages, who basely abused him. The Popish Women also threw Dirt at him, and could scarce be restrained from tearing him to Pieces. He was kept close Prisoner, none being suffered to bring him Necessaries; yet at last, through GOD's Mercy, he was released, at the earnest Request of the Prince of *Portion*. They broke down the Pulpit and stripp'd the Dead naked; and so the Duke departed, sounding his Trumpets as if he had obtained a great Victory.

WHEN he came to *Paris*, he, with the Constable and Marshal of *St. Andrews*, seized upon the
King,

King, overthrew the Places where they of the *Religion* used to assemble; which so encouraged the *Popish* Party, that in every Place they so abused the *Protestants*, as the most cruel Barbarians would have been ashamed to do. This caused a Civil War, wherein the Duke of *Guise*, having taken *Roan*, sacked it for the Space of three Days, and executed many of the Citizens.

NOT long after he went to *Orleans*, boasting that within twenty-four Hours he would win the Town, and spare neither Man, Woman, nor Child in it; and that he would so destroy the Town, that the Memory of it should be extinct for ever. But Man purposes, and GOD disposes. For the same Night, a young Gentleman, named *John Poltrot*, shot him with his Pistol, so that he shortly after died. After his Death, Peace was concluded between the Queen-mother and the *Protestants*. But before this Peace took Place, those of the *Religion* suffered much in sundry Parts of the Realm.

IN *Chalons* there was a Minister, called *Fournier*, apprehended and spoiled of all that he had. They stripped him also of his Apparel; instead whereof, they put him on a Thread-bare Cloak, and so carried him away in a Cart, by Reason of an Hurt that he had gotten in one of his Feet. By the Way, they did nothing but scoff at him, and every Moment he was in Danger of his Life. The rude People also had almost pulled him to Pieces. But it pleased GOD, that he was preserved by those who had designed him to Death. When he came to *Munchon* he was cast into Prison, and after a While there came a Captain to him with many Soldiers, who, mixing Mocks and Threatnings together, swore that he should be hewn in Pieces. After them came in some of the Judges, who com-

VOL. VI. N mandated

manded the Jailor to load him with Irons, saying: *You are no better than St. Peter, whom they laid in Irons. But if you have as much Faith as he, God will deliver you as He did him, by sending an Angel to you.* I will not, said Fournier, compare my self with St. Peter; yet it is not Twelve Years ago, since for preaching the same Doctrine, that Peter did, I was imprisoned at Tholouse, and there was admirably delivered. And though Peter was delivered out of Prison, yet in the End he glorified GOD by his Death. And if I should be counted worthy with him to suffer for the Truth, may it not be said, that I have the like precious Faith with St. Peter? When they were gone, the Jailor forbore putting Bolts upon him, because of his sore Leg, yet he put him into a straiter Prison.

AFTERWARDS, the Duke of Guise being made Governour in that Place, he was put to the Torture. First they strained his Thumbs so hard with a small Cord that Blood came forth. Then turning his Arms behind his Back, they hoisted him up with a Rope put between his Thumbs, twitching him up and letting him down five or six Times. They also tied great Stones to both his great Toes, and let him hang till his Spirits failed. Then they let him fall with such Violence upon his Face, that he was grievously hurt thereby. Then he was thrown into Prison, and they would not suffer him to have a Chirurgeon to cure him of the Gashes, which the Cords had made in his Flesh, even to the bare Bones. His Torment and Anguish was very great; neither could he lift his Hands (which he was likely to lose the Use of) to his Mouth. But it so fell out by GOD's Providence, that after he was condemned, there came News of the Duke of Guise's Death. At this his Enemies began to tremble; and some of his Judges coming to him into Prison, asked him: *If he did not bear them ill Will?*

Will? He answer'd: *Men of my Religion ought not to bear Malice to any; being enjoined of GOD to love and pray for those that persecute them.* He added: *Whatsoever Troubles have befallen me, were none other, but such as GOD had fore-ordained for the setting forth of his own Glory, for which I esteem my self most happy.* Yet I warn you to lay to Heart the Wrong you have done me, lest the Vengeance of GOD should sooner or later overtake you for it. The next Day, *Bulsi*, one of his Persecutors, having received Letters from the Constable of *France* to release him, swore, that he should be delivered indeed, but into the Hands of the Populace.

It pleased GOD, that, just at that Time, the Prince of *Portion* came by with his *German* Soldiers, which were on the *Protestant's* Side. They sent Word that they would not let so much as a House stand in *Chalons*, except they would deliver *Fournier*. This so affrighted his Enemies that they released him out of Prison, protected him from the Violence of the Multitude, and conveyed him in Safety to the Prince. He was kindly entertained, all grieving for the Miseries which he had endured. Two Days after he preached before the Prince and his Followers. The Day after, at the earnest Request of the *Protestants* of *Vitry*, he went to them to Preach and Baptize their Children. Shortly after he was called to *Ver*, where he gathered a Congregation, and spent some Time amongst them with wonderful Fruit: But by Reason that he was so extremely weaken'd by his strait Imprisonment and Tortures, (being above Fifty Years old) he soon after finished his Course.

AT *Montargis*, there liv'd the Lady *Rene*, Dutcheſs Dowager of *Ferrara*, and Daughter to King *Lewis XII.* The Duke of *Guise* sent thither one *Malicorn*, who entering the Town, murder'd

some of the *Religion*, and committed other Outrages. He then proceeded so far as to threaten the Lady to batter her Castle with Cannon-Shot, if she would not deliver up those of the *Religion*, which were with her. The Princess answer'd: *I charge you, look what you enterprize; for no Man in the Realm can command me but only the King. If you proceed to batter, I will stand in the Breach, to try whether you dare kill the Daughter of a King. And take Notice, I want neither Means nor Power to be reveng'd on your Boldness; even to the Infants of your rebellious Race.* This stout Answer made *Malicorn* depart.

AT *Mans* 200 Persons, Men, Women, and Children were put to Death. The Houses of the *Protestants* were pillag'd. Such as were fled, were executed by their Pictures, their Goods confiscated, and their Children made incapable of their Offices and Estates; yea, of inheriting their Lands. Some they beheaded, others they hung up or massacred, and being half dead, threw them into the River. Above 120 Men, Women, and Children were murder'd in the neighbouring Villages. One Captain threw above 50 Persons into his Fish-pond to feed his Pikes, and above as many more were thrown into Ditches.

AT *Angers*, a godly Minister, and above 80 other Persons were executed. A Gentlewoman, aged 70 Years, was beat to Death, and afterwards they drew her Body through the Streets, and threw it into the River, saying: *There is the Mother of the Devil, that preach'd to the Huguenots, (the common Name of the Protestants in France.)* A Counsellor's Wife, that lay Bed-ridden, was murder'd, and Women and Maids were ravish'd. All that were but suspected to be of the *Religion*, were massacred, and their Houses pillag'd. They broke a Captain upon

upon a Cross, contrary to their Faith given, and left him hanging, in great Misery, 'till he died.

IN 1562, a Decree was made by the Parliament of *Paris*, commanding all *Catholicks* immediately to rise in Arms, to sound the Bells in every Place, to destroy all those of the *Religion* without Respect of Quality, Sex, or Age, to spoil their Houses, and utterly to root them out. This encourag'd all Sorts to rise in Arms, forsaking their Vocations, and to march against the *Protestants*.

IN *Ligueul*, they hang'd up some, put out the Minister's Eyes, and then burnt him in a small Fire. In other Places they committed infinite Villanies. One young Man they slay'd alive. The Village of *Aze* they burnt down, and massacred 30 Persons therein. A Minister, call'd *John de Tour*, aged 75 Years, was burnt by them.

AT *Tours*, 140 Persons were murder'd, and cast into the River. Divers others were drown'd, sparing neither Man, Woman, nor Child. The President being suspected to favour them of the *Religion*, was beaten with Staves, stripp'd to his Shirt, hang'd up by one Foot, with his Head in the Water up to his Breast; and whilst he was yet living, they ript up his Belly, pluck'd out his Guts, and threw them into the River. Then sticking his Heart upon the Point of a Lance, they carry'd it about, saying: *This is the Heart of the President of the Huguenots.*

SHORTLY after, the Duke of *Montpensier* came thither, who caus'd Gibbets, Wheels, and Stakes to be set up, whercon some Hundreds, especially of the richer Sort, were murder'd. When they put any Man or Woman to Death, they enter'd

their Houses, murder'd their Children, and took all their Goods.

THERE was a poor Woman, whose Husband was drown'd a little before, who had a young Infant sucking at her Breasts, and a beautiful Daughter, of about sixteen Year old in her Hand. These Villains drew them all to the River. When they came there, the Woman falling on her Knees, pray'd ardently to GOD. Then she took her Infant, and laid it upon the Grass. In the mean Time this Hellish Rabble endeavour'd, partly by Threats, partly by fair Promises, to seduce the young Maid. One of them with more Flattery than the rest, promis'd to marry her, if she would consent to his Will. At this, the poor Girl stood in Dismay. Her Mother, who was ready to be thrown into the River, perceiving it, earnestly exhorted her Daughter, to persist in the Truth. The Daughter then cry'd out: *I will live and die with my Mother, whom I know to be a virtuous Woman. As for your Threats and Promises, I regard them not; do with me as you please.* The Mother was then thrown into the Water, and before she was dead they threw in the Daughter after; who getting to her Mother, they mutually embrac'd each other, and so yielded up their Souls into the Hands of GOD.

IN the same City, there was a godly Matron, whose Name was *Glee*, who was carry'd before the Captain, to whom she gave a Reason of her Faith, and confirm'd it by evident Testimonies of Scripture. She disputed also with some Eriars, whom she so silenc'd, that they had nothing to say, but that *she was in a damnable Condition. It seems so indeed, (said she) being in your Hands; but I have a GOD, that will not fail, nor forsake me.* She was then committed to Prison, where she was much
sol-

sollicited to recant, but all in vain: For she spake her Mind freely, and comforted the Prisoners which were in the same Prison for Religion. When she was condemn'd to be hang'd, and the Rope was put about her Neck, she kneel'd down, praising and magnifying the Name of GOD, in that He shew'd her such Mercy, as by this Death to deliver her out of the Troubles of this wretched World; as also, for that it pleas'd the LORD to honour her so as to call her to die for his Truth. She then breakfasted with the Company, and when she had given Thanks to GOD, she exhorted them to be of good Courage, and to trust to the End in his free Mercy. As she went to Execution, a Kinswoman met her, with her little Children, and perswaded her to recant; telling her, That thereby she might preserve her Life, and see her Babes provided for. This wrought so upon her motherly Affection, that it made her shed Plenty of Tears; but presently taking new Courage, she said: *I love my Children dearly; yet neither for Love to them, nor for any Thing else in the World, will I renounce my GOD, or his Truth. GOD will be a Father to these my Children, and will provide better for them than I could have done; and therefore I commend and leave them to his Providence and Protection.* At the Place of Execution, having pray'd to, and praised GOD with a chearfull Heart and Voice, she quietly resign'd up her Spirit.

IN *Valouñes*, divers Persons of good Quality were massacred, and the Houses of the Protestants were filled with Soldiers, that did what they list'd therein. Amongst other Outrages, they slew a godly Minister, call'd *Monsieur de Valouñes*, whose Body they stript naked, and dragg'd it up and down his House with Scorns and Jeers. At last, bringing the Corpse into the Chamber where he used to preach to his People, they spurned at it, saying: *Now pray to GOD, and preach if Thou canst.* The Priests

Priests that were present, stuff'd his Mouth and Wounds with the Leaves of his Bible, saying: *Preach the Truth of thy GOD, and call upon Him now to help thee.*

ONE *Monluc*, having defeated a Party of the Protestants, near *Blois*, under *Monsieur Duras*, he took divers Prisoners, most of whom he hang'd, especially the Ministers. Amongst the Prisoners was a Captain call'd *La Mothe*, whom *Monluc* meeting with, gave him divers Stabs with a Dagger, and thrust him through with a Rapier, saying: *Villain, thou shalt die in Spite of GOD!* But he prov'd a Liar; for he being carried away, tho' he had many mortal Wounds, yet was wonderfully cur'd, and liv'd afterwards.

IN *Guillac*, the Murders committed upon the Protestants were many and horrible. Amongst others, this was one of their Practices: There was the Abbey of *St. Michael* near the City, built upon a high Rock, under which ran a deep and rapid River, call'd *Tar*. They forc'd many of the Protestants to go up to the Top of this Rock, and then they threw them down headlong into the River. By the Way there was another Rock, upon which most of the Bodies falling, were dash'd to Pieces. If any escap'd with Life, into the River, there were Cut-Throats, waiting upon the River in Boats, to knock them on the Head. Amongst others, there was one *Peter Domo*, an Apothecary's Servant, who, seeing them bent to murder him, requested, That he might have Leave to cast himself down from the Top of the Abbey, provided, that if GOD should preserve him in the Fall, that they would suffer him to escape with Life; whereupon, having made his Prayers to GOD, he fetch'd his Leap from the Top of the Abbey, and flew so far, that

that missing the Rocks under him, he fell safely into the River. He then endeavour'd to swim out with Life; but these perfidious Villains, contrary to their Promise, knock'd him on the Head, and slew him.

IN *Souraize*, there was one Capt. *Durre*, who, with his Soldiers, going into the House of a godly Widow, call'd *Castille Roques*, caus'd her to be bound with Cords, and a Rope to be put about her Neck, by which he haled her up and down, almost strangling her. Then he ask'd her, How often she play'd the Whore, with those of her Religion? She answer'd: *That in their Christian Meetings they had no such Villanies committed.* *Durre* fretting and fuming at this Answer, took her by both the Cheeks, and often dash'd her Head with great Violence against the Wall. Then he requir'd her to give him the 700 Pieces of Gold, which she had hid. She told him, She was a poor Woman, and had only one *French Penny*. This enrag'd him more; whereupon he drew her up again by the Neck, and apply'd burning-hot Eggs to her Arm-pits, 'till they were all blister'd; bidding her, in Derision, to cry aloud to her Father which was in Heaven. She answer'd: *I will not cry aloud; and yet my GOD can hear me well enough; and when his Pleasure is, He will deliver me out of thy Hand.* This made him blaspheme so, that the poor Woman was more afflicted to hear his Blasphemies, than with all her Pain. Then calling her *Huguenot Whore*, he told her: That these were but the Beginning of her Sorrows, except she fetch'd him out her Gold; for he would draw her Cheeks and Breasts with Lard, and so roast her quick, and afterwards throw her headlong from the highest Steeple in the Town. *Well*, (said she) *If you throw my Body never so low, that shall not hinder my Soul from*

from ascending into Heaven. This her Courage and Constancy did still further enrage him. Then he open'd her Mouth with a Dagger, and cramm'd Lime down her Throat; after which he made her drink a Glass of his own Urine, and then threw the Glass into her Face. At last he carry'd her to his Quarters, where he intended to have slain her; but some of the Neighbours, pitying her Condition, redeem'd her from him with Ten Crowns, and convey'd her to her House, where she dy'd shortly after.

IN *Tholouse*, the Papists fell upon the Protestants, hurt many, kill'd some outright, and threw divers into a Well. Then some Counsellors proclaim'd, That they should not spare to kill and spoil all those of the *Religion*, for that they were licens'd by the King and Pope so to do. This soon ran through all the Villages, and the Papists rang their Bells upon the News. There were in *Tholouse*, about 30,000 Protestants, so that there began one of the most horrible Massacres, that ever was in those Parts. The Prisons were presently filled and many were knock'd on the Head at the Prison Doors, because they could hold no more. The River, in a short Space, was cover'd with dead Bodies. Many were thrown out of the Windows into the Street. If any sought to escape out of the Water, they were presently slain with Swords or Stones.

SOME of the Protestants got into the Town-House, where they stood upon their Guard, and at last it was agreed, That leaving their Arms, they should depart in Safety; so after they had receiv'd the Sacrament, and commended themselves to God with Prayers and Tears, they came forth. But contrary to the Faith and Promise made to them, the Popish Party seiz'd upon as many as they

they could, whom they cast into Prison. Of such as got out of the City, some escap'd to *Montauban*; others, in the Way, were spoil'd and kill'd by the Soldiers and Peasants.

IN *Limous*, the Papists used all Manner of Cruelty, deflouring the Women, nay, even the very Girls, in a most detestable Manner. The Minister was slain, and two Gentlemen, together with sixty others were hang'd. A Widow, of a great Family, redeem'd the Virginity of her only Daughter with a great Sum of Money; but the Villain, that promis'd to defend her, ravish'd her in her Mother's Presence, and then kill'd them both.

IN *Nonnay*, *Monsieur Chaumont*, having surpriz'd the Town, murder'd many Protestants, spitting out horrible Blasphemies against GOD Himself. A Locksmith, being commanded to blaspheme GOD, and, on refusing to do it, was immediately hewn in Pieces. Another, for the same Cause, was brained with the Butt-end of a Musket. A Nailor, because he would not give himself to the Devil, was drawn about his Shop by the Ears; then, being laid on the Anvil, they beat his Head in Pieces with Hammers. Three of the Principal in the Town were thrown down from a high Tower. Many others were thrown down to make Sport. Some were burnt in their Houses; others thrown out at Windows; others stabb'd in the Streets; Women and Maids were most shamefully handled. A young Woman, that was found hid in an House, with her Husband, was ravish'd before his Face; they then forc'd her to hold a Rapier, while one forcing her Arm, made her kill her own Husband therewith.

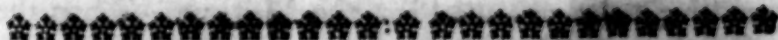
IN

IN *Foix*, many Protestants were cast into Prison, of whom some had their Arms and Legs cut off, and then were beheaded; some burnt, some hang'd, and others sent to the Gallies.

IN *Orange*, they kill'd the *Protestants* without Distinction of Age, Sex, or Quality. Some they stabb'd; others they threw upon the Points of Halberds; some they hang'd; others they burnt in the Churches; some had their Privy-Members cut off; neither Old, nor Bed-rid, nor the Diseas'd in the Hospitals were spared. Sucking Children were massacred at their Mother's Breasts. Girls of five or six Years old, were ravish'd and spoiled. The Wounds of the Dead were filled with Leaves torn out of the Bible. Those in the Castle being 190, that had yielded upon Promise of Safety, were all stabb'd, or thrown over the Walls.

IN *Mafcon*, the bloody Persecutors apprehended a godly and learned Minister, call'd *Bonnet Ber*, who was of a very unblameable Life, and had been Twenty Years in the Ministry; during which, he had been put to his Ransom three Times. They carry'd him along the Streets with a thousand Scoffs and Scorns, smiting him with their Fists, and thrusting him up and down. As they pass'd along, they made this Proclamation: *Whosoever will hear this holy Man preach, let him come to the Slaughter-House.* To this Place he was led, where they again buffeted and mock'd him two Hours together. Seeing them bent upon his Death, he requested them, That before he died, they would permit him to pray to GOD. Then one stepping to him, cut off half his Nose, and one of his Ears, saying; *Now pray as long as you will, and then we shall send thee to all the Devils.* This holy Man then kneeling down, pray'd with such Fervency of Spirit, that he even drew Sighs from some of the Murderers.

derers. Afterwards directing his Speech to him, that had cut off his Nose, he said: *Friend, I am now ready to suffer what thou hast further to inflict upon me. But I entreat thee and thy Companions, to bethink you well of the Outrages committed by you against this poor City; for there is a GOD in Heaven, before whose Tribunal you must shortly give an Account of these your Cruelties.* A Captain passing by, said: *Send that wretched Man to the Devil.* One of them, hearing this, took him by the Hand, pretending to have him to the River, to wash off his Blood; but when he came there, he threw him into it, and batter'd him with Stones 'till he was drown'd.





T H E
H I S T O R Y
O F T H E
M A S S A C R E at P A R I S.

IN the Year 1571, after the End of the third Civil War in *France*, great Means were used to draw the Chief of the Protestants to *Paris*, under Pretence of a Marriage between the Prince of *Navarre*, and the Lady *Margaret*, Sister to *Charles IX.* King of *France*. In the mean Time, the Papists in *Roan* murder'd divers Protestants, as they came from a Sermon, and grievously beat others. This seem'd much to displease the King, and three or four were executed for the Mutiny. Then the Articles of Marriage were agreed upon. The Place appointed for the Celebration of it was *Paris*, and Admiral *Chatillon* was sent to by the King, to be present at the Wedding; and to prevent all Jealousies, those of the House of *Guise* were sent away; whereat they seem'd much discontented.

The

The Admiral was allow'd to bring with him fifty Gentlemen arm'd for his greater Security. When he came to *Paris*, he was honourably receiv'd and conducted to the King, who call'd him his Father, protesting, That in all his Life, he had not seen a Day more agreeable to his Mind, than that; wherein he assured himself to see the End of all Troubles, and the Beginning of firm Peace and Quietness in his Realm. The Queen-Mother, and the rest of the great Courtiers, receiv'd him with greater Favour than he expected. Then the King sent him 100,000 Franks out of his Treasury, for the Losses which he had receiv'd in the Wars.

ADMIRAL *Chatillon* had divers Advertisements of the intended Treachery; yet GOD so blinded him at that Time, tho' a very prudent Man, that he gave little Heed to them. Yea, such a general Stupidity seiz'd upon the Protestants, that their Minds were wavering, and few there were that shew'd themselves zealously bent to Religion; but all, both great and small, thinking deeply upon Worldly Matters, built them goodly Castles in the Air.

THE Queen of *Navarre* was sent for by the King of *France* to *Paris*, to prepare all Things against the Wedding. Presently after her Arrival, she fell sick of a Fever. In her Illness, she had much inward Joy and Comfort, and at five Days End died; not without Suspicion of Poison, from certain Perfumes given to her. After her Death, the Surgeons were not suffer'd to open her Head, where the Mischief lay, whereby it was better conceal'd.

THE Admiral was again advertis'd of his Danger; but he, resting upon the Testimony of a good Conscience, and the Providence of GOD, misinterpreted those Advices, as if they proceeded from

Men desirous of new Troubles. Many Lords and Gentlemen of the *Religion* accompany'd the King of *Navarre*, and the Prince of *Cande* to *Paris*.

THE King of *France*, the better to delude the *Protestants*, spoke openly, That he gave not his Sister to the King of *Navarre* only, but, as it were, to the whole Church of the *Protestants*, to join with them in an indissoluble Union, and as a Tie to their Peace and Safety.

AUGUST 17, 1572, the King of *Navarre* and the Lady *Margaret* were marry'd by the Cardinal of *Bourbon*, in the Sight of all the People, and that Day was spent in Banquets, Dances, and Masks, with a strange Mixture of *Protestants* and *Papists* together. In the mean Time the Queen-Mother, with the Duke of *Anjou*, and the *Guises*, consulted about killing the Admiral, and dividing the *Protestants*.

FIVE Days after, as the Admiral came from the Court, accompany'd with about fifteen Gentlemen, reading a Petition as he went, one shot at him with a Musket. The Bullet took away his Right Fore-Finger, and hurt him in the Left Arm. The Assassin had a *Spanish* Jennet at the Back-Door of his Lodging, upon which, as soon as he had shot, he mounted and escap'd. The Door being burst open, it was found, that the Musket left behind, was brought to the House, the Day before, by one *Chally*, Steward to the King's House, and a great Dealer for the Duke of *Guise*. The Admiral being convey'd to his Lodging, shew'd most admirable Piety, Patience, and Constancy.

THE King complain'd of the Mischief, swearing, and promising to execute such Justice upon the Offender, that the Admiral and all his Friends should

should think themselves well satisfy'd. He also caused all the Gates of *Paris* to be shut; Swearing and Blaspheming, That he would not that they, which had done the Fact, should escape. He also appointed many Lords and Gentlemen of the *Protestants*, to lodge in the Admiral's Quarter, the better, as he pretended, to secure themselves against any Danger.

IN the Afternoon the King went to visit the Admiral, and there, with many Oaths and Protections, assur'd him of his Love to him, his Care over him, and them of the *Religion*; and that he would severely punish the Authors of his present Hurt. Presently after the Vidame of *Chartres*, (*John de Ferriers*) advis'd the King of *Navarre*, the Prince of *Conde*, the Admiral, and other chief Lords of the *Religion*, immediately to depart out of *Paris*; assuring them, That that Blow was but the Beginning of the Tragedy, which was soon to ensue; but they, trusting to the King's Word, rested secure.

THE same Day also, the King wrote to the Ambassadors of Foreign Princes, and to the Governors of all his Provinces; declaring how he was offended at the Admiral's Hurt, and how severely he would punish it; yea, desiring, That all the World might know how much he was offended at it. And the Queen-Mother wrote the like.

IN the mean Time, the Dukes of *Anjou* and *Guise*, employ'd some to go from House to House to take the Names of all the *Protestants*, and to return the Catalogue to them. By this, they of the *Religion* began to discover, that some bloody Intentions were hatching against the Admiral and his Friends. The King then set a Guard at the Admiral's Gate.

Great Store of Arms were carry'd into the *Louvre*, and about Evening all the People were in Arms.

THE chief of the *Protestants* hereupon assembled again in the Admiral's Lodging, where the Vidame of *Chartres* advised as before, that they should essay presently to carry the Admiral out of *Paris*, and that the rest should presently dislodge; yet all the rest refused his Council, resolving to rely upon the King's Word.

IN the Evening some *Protestant* Gentlemen prof-fered to watch with the Admiral, but he would not suffer them. At Night the Duke of *Guise* sent for the Captain of the *Switzers*, shewing him his Commission to kill the Admiral, and all his Partakers, exhorting him and his Men to be courageous. At Midnight the Provost, Sheriffs, and Captains of every Ward had the same shewed them, with Assurance, That through the whole Realm the like should be done to all the *Protestants*, and that the Watch-Word for the general Massacre should be, The tolling of a Bell in the Palace, at Break of Day; and the Badge of the Executioners should be, A white Handkerchief tied on their Arms, and a white Cross in their Hats. The Duke of *Guise* and his Associates, were to begin at the Admiral's Lodging.

SOME of the *Protestants* being awakened with the Noise of Men in the Streets running up and down in Arms, and with Torches, gat up to enquire what was the Matter. Presently the Bell rung, and the Duke of *Guise* with his Cut-Throats hasted to, and knocked at the Admiral's Gates. He that open'd them was presently stabb'd. The Admiral hearing a Noise, got out of Bed, and joined with Mr. *Merlin* his Minister in fervent Prayer; commending his Soul into the Hands of God. Then said

said he *I have long disposed my self to die; save you your selves, if it be possible, for you cannot save my Life. I commit my Soul into the Hands and Mercy of God.* Then *Merlin* and the rest got to the Top of the House, and crept out of the Windows into the Gutters to hide themselves; yet most of them were slain in the next House. Then seven or eight Men brake into the Admiral's Chamber, and one of them went to him with his naked Sword, offering him the Point, to whom he said: *Young Man, thou oughtest to respect my Age and Infirmary, yet thou shalt not shorten my Life.* With that he thrust him into the Body, and all the rest laid at him so, that he fell to the Ground, where he lay gasping. The Duke of *Guise* below, called to them to throw his Body out at Window, which they did. His Face being all bloody, the Duke of *Guise* wiped it, and looking on it, said; *I know him, it is he;* and so kick'd him on the Face with his Foot, whom all the Murderers in *France* feared so much when he was alive.

THEN he went out into the Streets, crying: *Courage, my Fellows, we have here made a good Beginning. Let us fall upon the Rest. The King commands it. It is his express Pleasure; he commands it.* The Admiral's Head was sent to the King and Queen-Mother, and by them sent to the Pope and Cardinal of *Lorrain* as a grateful Present. When the Pope heard it, he set apart a Day of publick Thanksgiving to GOD, in the Church of *St. Lewis*, and publish'd a Bull of extraordinary Indulgences to such as should pray for the heavenly Assistance to the King and Kingdom of *France*. The common People cut off the Admiral's Hands and privy Members, drawing his Body about the Streets three Days, and then hung it by the Feet upon the Gallows.

ALL the Attendants of the King of *Navarre* and Prince of *Conde*, which lay in the King's Palace were massacred. The like was done to the Lords and Gentlemen, that lay about the Admiral's Lodging. And then through all the City the *Protestants* were murdered, so that that Night and the two next Days there were slain in *Paris* about 10,000 Persons of all Ranks, Ages, and Sexes; yea, they spared not Children in the Cradle, nor Infants in their Mothers Wombs.

THERE were at this Time in *Paris* about sixty thousand Men with Pistols, Pikes, Poinards, Knives, and such other bloody Instruments, that ran up and down swearing and blaspheming the sacred Majesty of God, cruelly massacring all they met with. The Streets were covered with mangled Bodies; Gates and Doors defil'd with Blood. The Shoutings and Howlings of the Murderers, mixed with the Cries and Groans of the Dying, and the Breaking open of Doors and Windows, with the Noise of Guns and Pistols, made a terrible Noise. Multitudes of dead Bodies were thrown into the *Seine*, which was redden'd with their Blood.

To colour this their Villany, they gave it out, that the *Huguenots* had conspired to kill the King. They also boasted that they had in one Day done that, which Processes, Sentences of Justice, and open War could not do in twelve Years.

THE King certify'd the King of *Navarre* and the Prince of *Conde* of all that was done, saying, *That he saved their Lives upon Condition, that they should renounce their Religion, and turn Papists.* The King of *Navarre* desired him not to force his Conscience, but to remember his Alliance so lately contracted betwixt them. The Prince of *Conde* with more Zeal told him, that his Body and Estate
were

were in his Power to do with them what he pleased; but for his Religion he was fully purposed not to forsake it, but to remain constant therein to the Loss of his Life. He put the King in Mind also that he had given his Faith to him, and to those of the *Religion*, and therefore he hoped he would not falsify his Oath. This so enraged the King that he called him Rebel, and the Son of a rebellious Person, with horrible Threatnings that he should lose his Head, if within three Days he alter'd not his Mind.

THE King and his Confidents, perceiving that this Massacre would not quench the Fire, but rather stir up the *Protestants* in other Parts of the Kingdom to defend themselves, they presently dispatched away Letters to the Governors of Towns, with express Commands to massacre all the Protestants. At the same Time the King wrote other Letters, wherein he laid the Fault of the Murder of the Admiral upon the Duke of *Guise*; pretending that he had quieted all Things in *Paris*, and intended that his Edicts of Pacification should hold inviolable.

UPON the Receipt of these Letters, the *Papists* fell upon the *Protestants* at *Meaux*, *Trois*, *Orleans*, and other Places, and murdered them without all Pity; besides such as were massacred in Villages and Fields, where they thought to save themselves; so that in a few Weeks there were about 30,000 Persons massacred in *France*.

BESIDES this general Account, some Particulars deserve Remembrance, which are these that follow. *Monsieur de la Place*, President of the Court of Requests, had a Captain armed, that came into his House, telling him, that the Duke of *Guise*, had slain Admiral *Cbatillon*, at the King's Appointment, with
many

many other *Huguenots*, and that he was come to protect him in this common Destruction; only he desired a Sight of the Gold and Silver that was in his House. The Lord *de la Place* amazed at his Audaciousness, asked him whether he thought there was a King or no? The Captain blaspheming, willed him to go with him to know the King's Pleasure. Hereupon the Lord went from him to secure himself. Then the Captain rifl'd his House, taking above one thousand Crowns out of it. The Lord would have secured himself in three several Houses, all which refused to entertain him, which caused him to go back to his own again. Here he found his Wife very heavy, for which he rebuked her, and discoursing to her of the Promises, told her, that we *must through many Afflictions enter into the Kingdom of God*. Then calling his Family together, he made an Exhortation to them, went to Prayer, and began to read a Chapter in *Job*. Then he went to Prayer again, resolving to suffer all Torments, or Death, rather than do any Thing that might dishonour God. Then came the Provost-Marshal, with many Archers to his House, pretending to secure him, and to convey him safely to the King, who would speak with him. *De la Place* told him that he was very willing to do it, but saw it impossible. Presently after came the Provost of Merchants, who also would needs have him to the King. *De la Place* would have excused it as before, but the Provost would have no Nay. Therefore resolving upon Death, which he saw he could not avoid, he embraced his Wife, and wishing her above all Things, to continue in the Fear of God, he went on his Way boldly. In the Street some Murderers that attended there for his coming, stabbed him with their Daggers, and the next Day threw him into the River.

PETER

PETER RAMUS, the King's Professor in Logick, was not forgotten. The Murderers breaking into the College of Priests, where he was, massacred him, and then cast him out of the Chamber Window, so that his Bowels gushed out upon the Stones.

A YOUNG Man going early abroad on the Sabbath Morning, and hearing of the Death of the Admiral, out of a singular Affection to his Mother, he hasted Home, informed her of the Danger, and secured her in a Place of great Secrecy. After which he shut himself up in his Study, in Order by Prayer to prepare himself for Death. The Murderers soon breaking in upon him with Battle-Axes and Staves, killed him, and threw him into the River.

Two Ministers belonging to the King of Navarre were also murder'd, and thrown into the River; but GOD miraculously preserved all the other Ministers in the City.

ONE of the Murderers snatching up a little Child in his Arms, the poor Babe began to play with his Beard, and to smile upon him; but he, instead of being moved to Compassion thereby, wounded it with his Dagger, and cast it all in Gore Blood into the River.

THE King's Letters being come to Meaux upon the same Sabbath, to Cosset the King's Attorney there, upon the Sight of them, he presently went about to his Cut-throats, warning them to come to him Armed at seven o'Clock at Night; withall causing the Gates of the City to be shut up. The Hour being come, he with his Partisans went up and down, cruelly murdering the innocent Servants of Jesus Christ, in which bloody Employment

ment they spent all that Night. The next Day they pillaged their Houses, and took above 200 *Protestants* more, and shut them up in Prison. The Day after, towards Evening, *Ceset* with his Companions, went to the Prison, where, having a Catalogue of the Prisoner's Names, he called them out one by one, and they murder'd them, till they were weary. Then they went to Supper, that so they might breathe and refresh themselves. When they had filled themselves with Wine, they went back to glut themselves with Blood. They took with them Butcher's Axes, that they might Dispatch them the more easily. With these, as they called them forth, they knocked them down and murdered them. Amongst those that were thus Butchered, was an Elder of the Reformed Church, who pray'd for his Enemies, for which they laugh'd him to Scorn. He having a Buff-Coat on, which they were loth to spoil, they open'd it before, and stabb'd him in the Breast.

THERE was likewise an antient Man, that had been Sheriff of the City, whom they were not content to kill out-right, but first they cut off his Nose, Ears, and Privy Members, and then gave him several small Thrusts into the Body, tossing him up and down, till through Loss of Blood he fell down, calling upon the Name of the LORD; and so with many Wounds he was slain.

THE King's Letters being come to *Troys*, the *Protestants* were all shut up in Prison. Then the Bailiff sent for the common Hangman to murder them; but he refused, saying; *That his Office was only to execute such as were legally condemned*; and so went his Way. Then the Keeper of the Prison was sent for, who being sick, he sent one *Martin* to know what the Business was. The Bailiff imparted the whole Matter to *Martin*, wishing him
to

to murder all the Prisoners; and that their Blood might not run out into the Street, he bad him make a great Trench in the Midst of the Prison, and cause certain Vessels to be set into it to receive the Blood. This *Martin* went back with Abhorrence of the Fact; and concealed it from the Jailor. The next Day the Bailiff came to the Prison, and smiling, asked the Jailor, *If it was done?* He being ignorant of his Meaning, asked him, *What should be done?* Hereupon the Bailiff was so enraged, that he was ready to strike him with his Dagger, 'till he promised to perform his Will. Then the Jailor went to the Prisoners, who were in the Court, and shut them up one by one in their several Cells; which made them suspect that they were destin'd to Slaughter; and therefore they betook themselves to Prayer. The Jailor calling his Companions about him, acquainted them what was given him in Charge, and caused them to swear to execute it. But when they approached to the Prisoners, they were so surpris'd with Fear, that they stood gazing one upon another, not having Hearts to act so horrid Deed. Then they returned to the Jailor's Lodge, and sent for eight Quarts of the strongest Wine, with other Liquors, to intoxicate their Brains. Having taken a Catalogue of all the Prisoners, they gave it to *Martin* to call them forth in Order. The first Prisoner being called for, presented himself with a cheerfull Countenance, calling upon the Name of the LORD; and opening his Breast to them, he received the mortal Stroke, whereof he died.

ANOTHER being called forth, one of them thrust at him several Times with the Point of his Halberd, and wounded, but did not kill him. Then the Prisoner took the Point of the Halberd, and set it against his Heart, saying with a stedfast Voice:

Here, Soldier, here. Right at the Heart; right at the Heart: And so finished his Life.

THE rest were all murdered in the like Manner. After which, the Murderers made a great Pit in the Back-side of the Prison, into which they cast the Bodies one upon another; some of them being yet Alive: Yea, one of them raised up himself above his Fellows, whereupon they threw in Earth, and so smothered him. But the Bailiff's Order of making a Trench not being observed, the Blood of the Slain ran so abundantly out of the Prison Door, that thence, through the Channel, it ran into the River and turned it into the Colour of Blood, which bred an Horror in the very Papists themselves.

AT *Orleans*, the King's Edict for observing the Treaty of Peace was solemnly published, which made those of the *Religion* very secure; whereupon above 300 of them, Men, Women, and Children, met together at a Sermon. The same Night the King's Letters came for the Massacring of them all. Then the Mayor and Sheriffs raised the Companies in Arms to put it in Execution. One of these Murderers, with some of his Companions, went to a Counsellor's House, bidding themselves to Supper. The Counsellor ignorant of their Intents, made them good Cheer. When Supper was ended, uttering horrible Blasphemies, they Murdered him, and then plunder'd his House.

MANY of the *Religion* inhabited about the Ramparts of the Wall, amongst whom, nothing was heard all Night but shooting of Guns and Pistols, breaking open of Doors, fearful Out-Cries of Men, Women, and Children, that were Massacred, Trampling of Horses, Rumbling of Carts, that carried the dead Bodies away, and the Rav-
ings

ings of the Murderers that went up and down, crying out: *Kill, kill them all, and then take the Spoil.*

ONE Night some of the Murderers came and knocked at the Door of a Doctor of the Civil Law, and when he opened it to them, they told him, *That he must die.* Upon this he fell to Prayer with such Ardency and Affection, that they being amazed and over-ruled by a Divine Power, only robbed him and went away. The next Day some Scholars came to his House, desiring to see his Library, which he shew'd them. Then they ask'd, some for one Book, some for another, which he gave them. They told him at last they were not satisfied, but they must Kill him. Whereupon he betook himself to Prayer, and when he had done, he desired them to kill him there; but they refused it. Then they forc'd him out into the Streets, and led him by the Schools. He again desired them to kill him in that Place, where he had taught so long, but they still refus'd. When they had led him a little farther, they knocked him on the Head.

To fulfill the Measure of their Cruelty, such Protestants as through Fear revolted to them, they placed them in the Fore-front of their Companies; putting Weapons in their Hands, and compelling them to give the first Onset, crying: *Smite them, smite them. Are they not your holy Brethren and Sisters?* And if any refused, they presently slew him.

IN this Massacre, which lasted a whole Week, the *Papists* boasted, that they had slain above Twelve Thousand Men, besides Women and Children; some of them said Eighteen Thousand.

IN *Lyons*, *Mandolet*, Governor thereof, hearing of the Massacre at *Paris*, presently caused the City Gates to be shut, and raised Forces, commanding them, That if the Protestants came out of their Houses, though but with Swords, they should presently kill them. The Protestants seeing a Storm coming, which they knew could not arise without the special Providence of God, set themselves to bear it with invincible Patience. The Day following, if any of them did but go Abroad about their necessary Occasions, they were presently clapt in Prison; and when Night came, the Murderers enter'd their Houses, which they Rifled and Plunder'd; and pretending to carry the Protestants to Prison, they stabbed some of them in the Streets, and others they threw into the River, some of whom were carried down the Stream Half a Mile below the City, by which Means they escaped. The Day after, Proclamation was made by Sound of Trumpet, That all of the *Religion* should appear at such a Place to know the King's Pleasure concerning them. Many went, but as soon as they came, they were sent to several Prisons. The Night following, every Corner and Part of the City was full of lamentable Cries and Shreeking, partly of such as were Massacred in their Houses, partly of such as were but half Murder'd, and so haled to be thrown into the River. From that Time there was such horrible Murders committed in the City, as if the Devils in the Likeness of Men, ran Roaring about to do Mischief. The Sabbath Morning following, those that had hitherto escaped Massacring, were Dispatch'd.

IN the Archbishop's House there were 350 Prisoners shut up, and a Crew of Cut-Throats appointed to Murder them; to whom the Keys were delivered, and they rushing into the great Court,
gave

gave Notice to the Prisoners with a loud Voice that they must die. Then having first taken all the Prisoner's Purfes, they fell upon them; Hacking and Hewing them in a furious Manner; so that within an Hour and an Half, they were every one cut in Pieces. The Prisoners were all slain, with their Eyes and Hands lift up to Heaven, till their Hands were cut off.

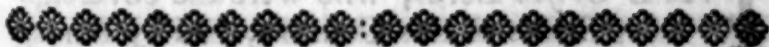
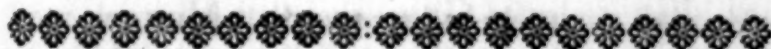
THERE was a Merchant named *Francis de Bos-su*, that had two Sons. The Father seeing these horrible Massacres, said to his Sons: *Children, we are not now to learn, that it hath always been the Portion of Believers to be hated, persecuted, and devoured by Unbelievers. If we Suffer with Christ, we shall also Reign with Him. Let not therefore these drawn Swords terrify us, they will be but as a Bridge whereby we shall pass to Eternal Life. We have lived long enough amongst the Wicked. Let us now go and live with our GOD. Let us joyfully go after this Company, that is gone before us.* When he saw the Murderers come, he clasped his Arms about his two Sons, and they theirs about him, as if they strove mutually to ward off the Blows each from the other, and were afterwards found Dead in their mutual Embraces.

THE Murderers went up and down the City boasting that they had Died their White Doublets Red in the Blood of the *Huguenots*. One bragged that he had killed an Hundred; some more, and some less. When the People went into the Archbishop's House, and saw the Slaughter that had been made there, though they were Papists, yet they said: *Surely they were not Men, but Devils that did this.* The dead Corpses were carried out, and spread like Dung upon the Earth; and when they were about to throw them into the River, an

Apothecary told them much Money might be made of their Grease. Then all the Fat Bodies were sought out, ripped up, and their Grease sold for three Shillings a Pound: Which being done, some were tumbled into a great Pit, others thrown into the River. The Countries which lay below upon the River, were amazed to see such Multitudes of dead Bodies come down the Stream, some with their Eyes pulled out, others their Noses, Ears, and Hands cut off, and stabbed in every Part of their Bodies, so that some had no Part of human Shape remaining.

THE News of the Massacre at *Paris* coming to *Toulouse*, the Gates of the City were presently shut up. But it pleased GOD, that that Morning most of the Protestants were gone out of the City to hear a Sermon. The Report of the shutting up of the Gates coming to them, some of them thought it not fit to return; others would needs go back to take Order about their Affairs. These were suffered to enter peaceably, leaving their Swords at the Gates, the rather to draw in the rest, amongst whom were divers Counsellors. Great Means were used to entrap them; and indeed some of them were enticed to come back. But when they saw they could get in no more, the *Wednesday* Morning following, Soldiers were sent to break into all the Houses of those of the *Religion*, and to carry them to sundry Prisons. The Gates were watched that none should escape. Command also was given that none should conceal any of the *Protestants*. Amongst the Prisoners were five or six Counsellors, who much comforted and encouraged the rest. Then all the Prisoners were brought together into one Place, and Letters procured from the King to Massacre them. Accordingly, some lewd Persons, armed with Axes and Butcher's Knives, were sent to effect it, who calling them out

out one by one, Murdered them all; not permitting them so much as to Speak, much less to Pray. The Number of the Slain was above 300, who were all stript stark Naked, and their Bodies left to the View of all for two Days together. Then they were thrown naked into Pits one upon another. Only the Counsellors were hung up in their long Gowns upon an Elm in the Palace-Yard. All their Houses were also Sacked and Plundered.



THE



THE
PERSECUTION
OF THE
CHURCH of GOD
IN THE
Valtelline.

In the Year of our LORD, 1620.

THE *Grison* Lords, who were the Sovereign Magistrates of this Country, had by sundry Decrees granted Liberty to the Protestants to exercise their Religion freely. But when the Minister of *Tell*, with his Congregation, were met together in the Service of GOD, the Bloody Papists rising in Arms, set upon them, slew one, and beat others so cruelly with Staves, that they were forced

to desist from their Purpose. Shortly after they Murdered some others, and set Guards upon all the Passages of the Valley, that none of the Protestants should escape them. Then they rang their Bells, and raised all the Country, and if any Protestants stirred out of their Houses, they Murdered them. They also brake into the Houses of others, drew them out of their Beds, and Murdered them. Some of the Protestants retir'd to the Houses of Papists that were near of Kin, or otherwise engaged to them, to secure themselves; but there they were betrayed and Murdered. Some they Strangled; some they Shot; beat out the Brains of others, and others they drowned in the River *Alba*.

A NOBLE Gentleman, that had hid himself, was found by them, who requested them to spare his Life for his dear Childrens Sake. But they told him, this was no Time for Pity, except he would abjure his Faith. *Nay*, said he, *GOD forbid, that to save this temporal Life, I should deny my LORD Jesus Christ, who with his precious Blood upon the Cross redeemed me at so dear a Rate. And having through his Grace so long, and publickly professed Him, that I should now Hazard the Loss of Eternal Life.* Hereupon they Murdered him. They brake also into the Palace of the Governor, and Murdered him. Women and Maids they Defloured; and of all the Protestants in that Country, there were only three that escaped over the horrid and vast Mountains of the *Alps* into *Rhetia*.

HAVING dispatched the Protestants in this Place, they marched to another, just at the Time when the Protestants were at Church hearing of a Sermon. They were guided to the Place by two Friars. The Protestants seeing them coming, shut the Church Doors, and barricaded them up with Benches. The Villains laboured to break open the

the Door, but when they could not readily do it, they clamber'd up into the Windows, through which they shot with their Musquets at the People, and Wounded and Killed many. The Minister being a Man rarely endued with Learning and Piety, according to the Shortness of Time, exhorted them to persevere in the Truth, notwithstanding all the Danger. In the mean Time, the Papists had forced open the Door, where they fell to Murdering of all without Respect of Quality, Sex, or Age. Some Lords and Gentlemen were here slain. The Minister was shot to Death. Divers Ladies and Children got into the Belfry; but they set Fire to the Place, and burnt them all.

THE Wretches, having thus glutted themselves with Blood in this Place, march'd to *Sondres*. The Papists in that Place, hearing of their Coming, went to the Justice, protesting, That they would guard him from any Danger, and that they would not suffer such Villainies to be committed amongst them. Then they beat their Drums, rang their Bells, and arm'd themselves, under Pretence of securing the Protestants; who, trusting to their Promises, mix'd themselves amongst them to stand for their own Defence. The Papists, concealing their Intent, kill'd now one, then another, as if it had been by Accident; so that divers of them were slain, yet they did not find out the Iniquity of the Practice. Some, both Men and Women, sought to escape; but all Passages being shut up, they were met with, and murder'd. Then they discover'd their Practice more openly, killing the Protestants wherever they met them.

HEREUPON eighteen of the Protestants, together with some Ladies and young Children got together, and the Men being well arm'd, they march'd close together, repulsing their Enemies, and at

last came to a Church in the Mountain of *Sandres*, unto which a Minister, and some others, in all about 73 Men, were gather'd together. After they had made their Prayers unto GOD, they passed the Valley of *Malaneo*, which was beset by the Enemy on both Sides. But such as kept the Passages, were by GOD's special Providence so astonish'd, that they fled away; and the Protestants, though they were pursu'd to the Top of the Mountains, miraculously escap'd with Safety.

THEN the Peasants join'd with these Villains, to rob and plunder the Houses of the Protestants, and amongst them, divers Noblemen's Houses, richly furnish'd. They also ran up and down through Fields, Woods, and Mountains, searching every Bush for the Protestants. And as they found any of them, they immediately murder'd them.

THERE was an honourable Lady, that not long before came out of *Italy*, to enjoy her Liberty of Conscience, whom they exhorted to change her Religion; which she refusing, they advised her, That at least she would do it, out of a Care for her young Infant, which she had in her Arms; who otherwise, together with herself, would presently be slain. She answer'd, with an undaunted Courage: *I have not departed out of Italy, my native Country, nor forsaken all the Estate I had there, now to renounce the Faith which I had wrought in me by the LORD Jesus Christ. I will rather suffer, if it were possible, a Thousand Deaths. How shall I have Regard in this Case to my Infant, since GOD my Heavenly Father spared not his own Son, my LORD Jesus Christ, but deliver'd Him up to Death for his Love to me, and such Sinners as I am? And so giving her Child to one, she said: Behold my Child! the LORD GOD, who hath Care of the Birds of the Air, is much more able to save this poor Creature, al-*
though

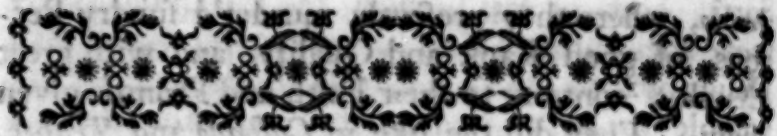
though it should be left by you to these wild Mountains. Then unlacing her Gown, she open'd her Breast, saying: Here is the Body, which you have Power to kill; but my Soul, on which you have no Power to lay your Hands, I commend to GOD. Then she was presently slain, and hewn in Pieces.

ONE *Dominico Berto*, of sixteen Years old, was set upon an Ass, with his Face to the Tail; and led thus, with many Jeers, to the Market-Place. Then they cut off his Nose, Ears, and Cheeks, and burnt many Holes in several Parts of his Body with hot Irons; continuing these Torments 'till they had kill'd him. Yet, thro' the wonderful Goodness of GOD, some Ministers with their Wives and Children, by great Travel, Dangers, and Difficulties amongst the craggy and high Mountains, were deliver'd out of the Hands of these bloody Persecutors.

A NOBLE Virgin, that came to *Sondres*, for the Sake of Religion, was seiz'd upon by these Villains, and carry'd through the Streets, with the greatest Shame and Disgrace. They put a Mitre of Paper on her Head, besmear'd her Face with Dirt, buffeted her on the Cheeks, and then exhorted her to call upon the Saints; But she, smiling thereat, said: *My Trust and my Salvation is only in my Saviour Jesus Christ, and upon Him only will I rest. As for the Virgin Mary, tho' she blessed above all Women, yet she is not Omniscient; and therefore knows not our Requests; yea, she herself had Need of the Merits of her Son, without which she could not have been saved.* They still continuing to deride her, she manfully said: *I willingly endure all this, as it becomes me to do, desiring no better Usage; seeing the same was done to my LORD and Saviour Jesus Christ, to his Apostles, and to Thousands of the holy Martyrs.* Then she was carry'd away, and murder'd in the Fields.

THESE Murderers, having slain all in *Tyrane*, *Bruse*, *Tell*, *Sondres*, and *Malenco*, went to *Berbenno*, where they presently murder'd sundry Persons, of good Rank and Quality, and with great Cruelty, contrary to their Faith and Promise given them. They did the like in *Cassano* and *Traben*, and divers other Places; shewing neither Pity nor Favour to any. In one House they slew a Man and his Wife; and seeing an Infant of three Years old lying in the Cradle, the Child, being a Girl of a sweet and amiable Countenance, and seeming to smile upon them, they took her by the Heels, and dash'd out her Brains. Then these Villains march'd to *Bruse*, where they also murder'd many; shooting some, drowning, stoning, and burning others, and grinding their Bones to Powder. Amongst other Cruelties, finding a poor Matron, aged 80 Years, they much solicited her to hear Mass, wishing her to have Respect to her Age. To whom she answer'd: *God forbid, That I, who now of a long Time have had one Foot in the Grave, should forsake my LORD Jesus Christ, who hath so long Time preserv'd me in the Knowledge and Profession of his Truth.* Whereupon they instantly slew her.





THE
PERSECUTION
OF THE
CHURCH of GOD
IN
Ireland,

In the Year of our LORD, 1642.

THOUGH the barbarous Cruelty, used by the *Irish* against the *English*, goes usually under the Name of Rebellion, yet I rather look upon it, as a Persecution, because their Cruelties were exercis'd upon Protestants only; neither were the *English* Papists murder'd; but join'd with the *Irish* in murdering their Brethren. Besides, the *Jesuits*,

Jesuits, Priests and Friars, were the chief Instigators to these Murders, stirring up continually all Sorts, both of the Gentry and Commonalty, to shew their utmost Zeal therein; and when their Design was so surely laid, that they thought it impossible to be prevented, they recommended, in their publick Devotions, the good Success of a great Design, tending much to the Advancement of the Catholick Cause. And that they might stir up the People with greater Animosity, to put it in Execution, they every where declaim'd loudly against the Protestants, saying: That they were Hereticks, not to be suffered any longer to live amongst them: That it was no more Sin to kill one of them, than to kill a Dog: And that it was a mortal and unpardonable Sin, to relieve or protect any of them.

WHEN their Plots were ripe for Execution, we find their first Proceedings against the *English* were various. Some of the *Irish* only stripping and expelling them; others murdering Man, Woman, and Child, without Mercy; yet all resolving universally to root all the Protestants out of *Ireland*; yea, so deeply malicious were they against the *English* Protestants, that they would not endure the very Sound of that Language, but would have all such punish'd as spake *English*; and the Names of all *English* Places they would have chang'd into the old *Irish*.

THE Priests gave the Sacrament unto divers of the *Irish*, upon Condition, That they should not spare Man, Woman, nor Child of the Protestants, saying: *That it did them a deal of Good, to wash their Hands in their Blood.* One Halligan, a Priest, read an Excommunication against all those, that from thenceforth should relieve or harbour any *English, Scotch, or Welsh*; or give them Alms at their Doors, whereby many were famish'd to Death.

The Friars with Tears exhorted them not to spare any of the *English*. They boasted, that when they had destroyed them in *Ireland*, they would go over into *England*, and not leave the Memorial of an *English-man* under Heaven.

THE Day before this Massacre was to begin, the Priests gave the People a Dismiss at Mass, with free Liberty to go out and take Possession of all their Lands, which they pretended to be unjustly detained from them by the *English*; as also to strip, rob, and despoil them of all their Goods and Cattle; the Protestants being, as they told them, worse than Dogs, for they were Devils, and served the Devil, and therefore the Killing of such was a meritorious Act, and a rare Preservative against the Pains of Purgatory; for that the Bodies of such of them as died in this Quarrel, should not be cold, before their Souls should ascend up into Heaven.

THE chief Gentlemen of the *Irish*, when this Persecution first began, perswaded many of their Protestant Neighbours, that if they would bring their Goods and Cattle to them, they would secure them from the Rage of the Common People. Hereby they got Abundance peaceably into their Hands, whereof they cheated the Protestants, refusing to restore them. Yet, the Protestants were so confident at first of their good Dealing in regard of former Familiarity, that they gave them Inventories of all they had: Nay, they digged up such of their best Things as they had hid in the Ground, and deposited them in their Custody. They also got much into their Hands by fair Promises, and deep Oaths and Engagements, that if they would deliver them their Goods, they would suffer them with their Wives and Children quietly.

to depart the Country; yet, having got what they could, they afterwards murder'd them.

HAVING thus seized upon all their Goods and Cattle, ransack'd their Houses, and gotten their Persons under their Power; the next Work, was to strip Man, Woman, and Child stark-naked, and so turn them out of Doors; not suffering them so much as to shelter themselves under Bushes, or in the Woods. All the *Irish* were strictly prohibited under great Penalties, to give them any Relief as they passed in the Highways. Their great Design herein was, that they on whom they would not lay their Hands, might miserably perish through Cold, Nakedness, and Want; and therefore if any of them got any old Rags to cover their Nakedness with, they stripped them again and again, sometimes twice or thrice over. The *Irish* Women were very active herein, and taught their very Children to do the like. They would not leave the Women so much as a Smock or an Hair-lace; so that many of them being starved, fell down Dead in the Highways. Others that got to any *English* Town, by reason of Famine and Cold, suffer'd so by the Way, that they died as soon as they came thither.

IN the Town of *Colerain*, many Thousands of these miserable People that fled thither for Succour, died in two Days. The Living not being able to bury their Dead, they laid their Carcasses in great Ranks in waste and wide Holes, piling them as close and thick as if they had been packing up Herrings together.

ONE *Magdalen Redman* deposed that she, and divers other Protestants, amongst whom were 22 Widows, were robb'd and then stripp'd stark-naked, and when they had covered themselves with

Straw in an House, the Papists threw burning Straw in amongst them to burn them. Then they drove them naked into the wild Woods in Frost and Snow, so that the Snow cover'd their Skins, and lay a long Time upon them unmelted. Some of their Children died in their Arms with Extremity of Cold. Some of these poor Souls went towards *Burre* for Shelter, but the *Irish* turned them back again, saying: *They should go to Dublin.* When they went towards *Dublin*, they beat them back, saying: *They should go to Burre*; and so they tossed them to and fro, till some of them died. Many of those, who through many Difficulties got to *Burre*, died there; and those that survived, lived miserably, by Reason of their many Wants.

HAVING disarmed the *English*, robbed them of their Goods and Cattle, stript them of their Cloaths, and having their Persons in their Power, they furiously broke out into all Manner of abominable Cruelties, Massacres, and Murders, so that it would make any Christian's Ear to tingle, and his Heart to ache to hear the Mention of them.

THERE were Multitudes murder'd in cold Blood; some while they were at Plough; others as they sat peaceably in their Houses; others travelling upon the Highways; all without any Manner of Provocation given by them, were suddenly destroyed.

NEAR 150 Men, Women, and Children were consumed with Fire in the Castle of *Lisgool*. One Hundred were slain together at the Castle of *Monrab*. At the Castle of *Tulla*, which was delivered to *Mac Guire* upon Composition, and faithful Promises of fair Quarter, as soon as he and his Men enter'd the Court, they began to strip the People,

People, and most cruelly put them to the Sword, murdering them all without Mercy.

AT *Liffenskeah* they hang'd and kill'd above 100 of the *Scottish* Protestants, shewing them no more Favour then they did the *English*. The Country thereabouts being well Planted and Peopled, was in a most horrible Manner quite destroy'd. In the Countries of *Armagh* and *Tyrone*, where the Protestants were more numerous, their Murders were multiplied, and with greater Cruelty, if it were possible, than in other Places.

MAC GUIRE coming to the Castle of *Liffenskeah*, desired in a friendly Manner to speak with Mr. *Middleton*. He was admitted in, and as soon as he enter'd, he first burned the Records of the County which were kept there. Then he demanded One Thousand Pounds of Sir *William Balfores's* Money which was in his Custody; as soon as he had got it, he caused Mr. *Middleton* to hear Mass, and to swear that he would never alter from it, and then immediately caused him, his Wife and Children to be hanged. He hanged and otherwise murdered above 100 Persons besides in that Place.

THERE were 1000 Men, Women and Children carried in several Companies to *Portendown* Bridge, and all unmercifully drowned in the River; the Bridge being broken in the Midst, and the People driven and forced on, till they tumbled into the Water. In that Country there were 4000 Persons drowned in several Places, the barbarous Papists driving the poor Souls on, when they had miserably stripped them, unto the Places of their Sufferings like Swine; and if any were slack in their Pace, they pricked them forward with their Swords and Pikes. To terrify the rest, they Kill'd
and

and Wounded some. When they were cast into the River, if any assayed to swim to the Shore, the Rebels stood and shot at them.

IN one Place 140 *English* were taken and driven like Cattle for many Miles together. They carried other Companies out under Pretence of safe Conduct, thereby causing them to march cheerfully till they had got them to some Place fit for Execution, and then murdered them there. They sent 115 Men, Women, and Children with Sir *Phelim O-neale's* Pass, till they brought them to *Portendown* Bridge, and then forced them all into the Water. Such as by Swimming or other Means sought to escape, they either knock'd on the Head, or shot to Death in the Water. One Mrs. *Campbel* being forced by them to the River, and finding no Means to escape their Fury, suddenly clasped one of the Chief of them in her Arms, and so both tumbling into the River, they were drowned together. At another Time 140 Protestants being thrown in at the same Place, as any of them swam to the Shore, the Villains with the But-ends of their Musquets, knock'd out their Brains.

O CANE gat together all the Protestants about *Armagh*, pretending to conduct them to *Coleraine*: But before they were gone a Day's Journey, they were all murdered; and so were many others, though they had Protections from Sir *Phelim O Neale*. The aged People in *Armagh* were carried to *Charlment*, and there murder'd.

PRESENTLY after the Town of *Armagh* was burnt, and 500 Persons of all Sorts were there murder'd and drown'd. Forty-eight Families were murder'd in *Killoman*. Twenty-two Protestants were burned in one House. All the Inhabitants in *Kilmore* were stripp'd and massacred, being 200 Families.

milies. Some they set in the Stocks and then massacred them. The whole Country was a common Butchery, where many Thousands perished in a short Time, by Sword, Famine, Fire, Water, and all other Manner of Deaths, that Rage and Malice could invent.

THESE Villains shew'd so much Favour to many as to dispatch them presently. Others they imprisoned in filthy Dungeons full of Dirt and Mire, and there clapping Bolts on their Legs, suffered them to perish at Leisure. One told *John Crowder* that they would kill him, but first bid him say his Prayers, and when he kneeled down to pray, they presently cut off his Head. When some, upon their Knees, begged but Leave to pray before they were slain, they would bid them bequeath their Souls to the Devil. Others would ask them: *Why do you desire to pray? your Souls are already with the Devil?* And so would immediately slaughter them. At *Cassel* they put all the Protestants into a loathsome Dungeon, where they kept them twelve Weeks in great Misery. Some they barbarously mangled and left languishing upon the Highways, crying out but for so much Mercy as to be dispatch'd out of their Pain. Some they hanged up twice or thrice. Others they buried Alive. Some when they were half Hanged, they cast into Pits, covering them with a little Earth, where they sent out most lamentable Groans for a good While after.

IN the *Queen's County*, an *English* Man, his Wife, five Children, and a Maid, were all hang'd together, then put into a Hole. The youngest Child not being Dead, put up the Hand and cried, *Mammy, Mammy*, and yet without Mercy they buried it Alive.

THOMAS MASON in *Laugal* was extremely beaten and wounded, yet his Wife and some others carried him away; whereupon the Villains cruelly hack'd, slash'd, and wounded them, and then dragg'd *Mason* into an Hole, and there threw Stones on him, with the Weight whereof they kept him under. There he lay Languishing and Groaning 'till his own Wife, to put him out of Pain, stopp'd his Breath with her Handkerchief.

AT *Clownes*, 17 Men were buried Alive, so that their pitiful Cries were heard afar off.

SOME were deadly Wounded, and so hang'd upon Tenter-hooks. Some with Ropes about their Necks were drawn through the Water. Some with Ropes about their Middles were drawn through Brakes and Bogs.

IN *Castle-Cumber*, one of these Cut-Throats took two Boys, and wounding them, hung them up upon a Butcher's Tenters. Some were hang'd up, and taken down several Times to make them confess where their Money was, which when they had done, they presently murder'd them. Some were hung up by their Arms, and then they tried how many Blows an *English* Protestant could endure before he died. Some had their Bellies ript up, and so left with their Guts running about their Heels.

AN antient Woman coming towards *Dublin*, was stript seven Times in one Day; and one Time they bad her go and look for her GOD, and bid him give her her Cloaths again.

IN *Kilkenny* they cruelly beat an *English* Woman, till they forced her into a Ditch, where she died. Then they took her Child, a Girl of about
fix

six Years old, ript up her Belly, and let out her Guts.

ONE Man they forced to Mafs with them, and afterwards ript up his Belly, took out his Guts, and left him Alive.

A SCOTCHMAN they stripp'd and knock'd on the Head, who afterwards coming to himself, went into the Town naked. Then they took him again, and hew'd him in Pieces. They also ript up his Wife's Belly, so that a Child dropt out of her Womb. They hung up many other Women great with Child, then ript their Bellies, and let the Infants fall out. Sometimes they gave their Children to be devour'd by Swine and Dogs. They took and hung up one *John Stone*, with his Son, Two Sons-in-Law, and their Wives. One of the young Women, being great with Child, they ript up her Belly, took forth her Child, and used such beastly, barbarous Actions to her, as are not fit to be mention'd. At *Newry*, they ript up a Woman's Belly, that was great with two Children, throwing them to be devour'd by Swine. Also, another Woman, being deliver'd of a Child in the Fields, they, which had formerly kill'd her Father and Husband, kill'd her also, with two of her Children, and gave the new-born Infant to be devour'd by Dogs.

In the County of *Armagh*, they robb'd, stript, and murder'd Abundance of Protestants, whereof some they burnt, some they slew with the Sword, some they hang'd, and others they starv'd to Death. They soon after met with two Gentlewomen, Mrs. *Howard*, and Mrs. *Frankland*, with six of their Children, and themselves great with Child, whom they murder'd with their Pikes, and ript open the Women's Bellies, took out their Children, and threw them into a Ditch. A young Scotch Woman's

man's Child they took by the Heels, and dash'd its Brains out against a Tree. They did the like to many other Children.

ANNE HILL, going with a young Child at her Back, and four more by her Side, was met by those Villains, who pull'd the Child from off her Back, and trod it to Death. Then they stript her, and the other four Children stark naked, whereby they died of Cold.

SOME others they met with, and hang'd them up on a Windmill; and before they were half dead, cut them in Pieces. Many other Protestants, especially Women and Children, they prick'd and stabb'd with their Forks and Swords, flashing, cutting, and mangling them in their Heads, Faces, Breasts, Arms, and other Parts, yet kill'd them not, but left them wallowing in their Blood, to languish, starve, and pine to Death; and when they desir'd them to kill them out of their Pain, they refused. Sometimes, after they had lain a Day or two in the utmost Misery, they would dash out their Brains with Stones or Clubs, which they accounted as a great Favour.

THE Castle of *Lisgoole*, being set on Fire by these merciless Papists, a Woman leap'd out at a Window to save herself from Burning, but they presently murder'd her. The next Morning her Child was found sucking at her Breast, which they also murder'd. Many Protestants, with their Wives and Children fled into Vaults and Cellars to hide themselves, and were all murder'd there. They stabb'd one *Jane Addis*, and then put her Child, of a Quarter old, to her Breast, saying: *Suck, you English Bastard*; and so left it there.

ONE *Mary Barlow*, had her Husband hanged before her Face, and she, with six Children, were all stript stark naked in Frost and Snow. Afterwards, sheltering themselves in a Cave, they had nothing to eat for three Weeks, but two old Calveskins, which they beat with Stones, and so eat them Hair and all, her Children crying to her rather to go out and be kill'd, than to stay there and famish.

IN the cold Weather many Thousand Protestants, of all Ranks, Ages and Sexes, being turn'd out stark naked, perish'd with Cold and Hunger. Some Thousands were drown'd, cast into Ditches, Bogs, and Turf-pits. Multitudes were inclosed in Houses, which being set on Fire, they were miserably burnt. Some that lay sick of Fevers, they drew out of their Beds and hang'd. Men, Women, and Children they drove into Boggy-Pits; and if any of them endeavour'd to get out, they knock'd them on the Head.

THESE Barbarians forc'd their own Children to carry some aged Men and Women to the River, where they were drown'd. Some Children were otherwise compell'd to be the Executioners of their own Parents. Wives were forc'd to help hang their Husbands, and Mothers to cast their own Children into the Water; after all which, they were murder'd themselves. In *Sligo*, they forc'd a young Man to kill his own Father, and then hang'd him up. In another Place, they forc'd a Woman to kill her Husband; then caus'd her Son to kill her, and then immediately hang'd her Son: And this they did that they might destroy both Soul and Body. Yea, such was their detestable Malice against the *English* Protestants, that they taught their Children to kill *English* Children. One of these Villain's Wives was very angry with their Soldiers, because they

VOL. VI. R did

did not bring the Grease of a fat Gentlewoman, whom they had slain, with them, for her to make Candles of.

THE *Irish* Women, that follow'd the Camp, urg'd on the Men to Cruelty, always crying out: *Kill them all; spare neither, Man, Woman, nor Child.* They took the Child of one *Thomas Stratton*, being about 12 Years old, and boiled him to Death in a Cauldron. One *Mrs. Lin*, and her Daughter, were carry'd into a Wood, where they first hang'd the Mother, and then the Daughter by the Hair of her Mother's Head. Some Women and Children of the *Irish*, meeting an *English* Woman great with Child, stript her to her Smock, and so rent and abused her, that the poor Woman falling into Labour, both she and her Child dy'd under their Hands.

IN some Places they pluck'd out the Eyes, and cut off the Hands of the Protestants, and so turn'd them out into the Fields to wander up and down 'till they perish'd. The very Women, in some Places, stoned the *English* Women to Death, together with their Children. One Man they shot through both his Thighs; then digging a Hole in the Ground, they set him in it upright upon his Feet, and then fill'd up the Hole, leaving out only his Head, where they left him, 'till he pin'd and languish'd to Death. They held another Man's Feet in the Fire 'till he was burnt to Death.

IN *Munster*, they hang'd up many Ministers. One Minister they stript stark naked, and drove through the Town, pricking him forwards with Darts and Rapiers, and so pursued him 'till he fell down dead.

THEY

THEY stript one *William Loverden* naked, then kill'd him before his Wife and Children, cut off his Head, and held it up for them to gaze at; and after his Wife had bury'd him in his Garden, they digg'd him up, and threw him into a Ditch. Divers Ministers Bones, that had been bury'd some Years before, they digg'd up, because they were, as they said, Patrons of *Heresy*.

ONE *Ellen Millington* they put into a Hole, fastening her with Stones, and left her there to languish to Death, bragging how many of them went to see her kick and toss in the Hole. They boasted upon their Success, That the Day was their own, and that ere long they would utterly destroy every one that had but a Drop of *English* Blood in them. Their Women cried out; *Slay them all, the English are fit Meat for Dogs, and their Children are Bastards*. Yea, so implacable was their Malice, that they vow'd, That they would not leave an *English* Beast alive, nor any of the Breed of them. How grievous was it to any Christian Heart to hear a base Villain boast, that his Hands were so weary with killing and knocking down Protestants into a Bog, that he could not lift up his Arms to his Head! Another boasted, That he had been a-broad, and had kill'd sixteen of the Rogues. Others boasted, That they had kill'd so many, that the Fat which stuck upon their Swords, would make an *Irish* Candle. Two Boys boasted, That at several Times they had murder'd and drown'd 36 Women and Children.

THESE merciless Papists having set a Castle on Fire, wherein were many Protestants, they rejoic'd exceedingly, saying one to the other: *O how sweetly do they fry!*

AT *Kilkenny*, when they had committed many cruel Murders, they bro't seven Protestants Heads. One was the Head of a Reverend Minister. All these they set upon the Market-Cross, on a Market Day, triumphing, flashing, and mangling them. Then putting a Gag into the Minister's Mouth, they slit up his Cheeks to his Ears, and laying a Leaf of a Bible before it, they said: *Now preach, for your Mouth is wide enough.* It cannot be imagined with what Scorn and Derision they acted these Things, and with what Joy and Exultation their Eyes beheld the sad Spectacle of the Protestants Miseries; what greedy Delight they took in their bloody Executions.

AN *English* Woman, whom they had stript stark naked, got a little Straw, which she ty'd about her Middle, to cover her Nakedness; but these Villains set Fire to it, boasting what brave Sport they had, to see how the Fire made the *English* Jade dance.

AT *Kilmore*, they put many Protestants, Men, Women, and Children together, in a thatch'd House, and then set it on Fire, boasting of the Lamentations and Out-cries that they made whilst they were burning, and how the Children gap'd when the Fire began to burn them; taking Pride, and glorying in imitating those Cries.

THEY took one Mrs. *Maxwell*, being in Labour, and threw her into a River; boasting that the Child's Arm appear'd, and that it was half-born when the Mother was drown'd.

THESE bloody Persecutors took great Pleasure and Delight in their Cruelty, and to encrease their Misery, when they butcher'd them, they used to say, *Thy Soul to the Devil.* One of them coming into an House, with his Hands and Cloaths all bloody,

bloody, made his Boasts, That it was *English* Blood, and that his *Skain* had pink'd the clean white Skin of many of them, even to the Hilt thereof. When any of them had kill'd a Protestant, many of them would come one after another, each of them stabbing, wounding, and cutting his Body in a most despitefull Manner, and then leave it naked to be devour'd of Dogs, Beasts, and Fowls; and when they had slain any Number of them, they would boast that they had made the Devil beholding to them, in sending so many Souls to Hell.

BUT its no Wonder that they carry'd themselves so towards these innocent Christians, when they spar'd not to belch out their execrable Blasphemies against GOD and his Holy Word.

IN one Place they burnt two Protestant Bibles, and then said it was Hell-Fire they burnt. Other Bibles they took, cut in Pieces, and then burnt them, saying: *That they would do the like to all Puritan Bibles.* In the Church at *Powerscourt*, they burnt the Pulpit, Pews, Chests, and Bibles belonging to it. Others took the Protestant Bibles, and wetting them in dirty Water, several Times dash'd them in the Faces of the Protestants, saying: *I know you love a good Lesson; here is an excellent one for you. Come To-morrow, and you shall have as good a Sermon as this.* They took the Bible of a Minister, call'd Mr. *Edward Slack*, and opening it, they laid it in a Puddle of Water, and then stamp't upon it, saying: *A Plague on it; This Bible hath bred all the Quarrel, and that they hoped, in a few Weeks Time, all the Bibles in Ireland should be used as that was, or worse.*

THEY did most despitefully upbraid the Profession of the Truth to those blessed Souls, whom neither by Threats nor Terrors, Pains nor Tor-

ments they could draw to forsake their Religion. And tho' some by extreme Torments were drawn to profess the Change of their Religion, yet did they find no more Favour with these Hell-Hounds, for they would afterwards murder them, and with great Scorn say: *That it was fit to send them out of the World whilst they were in a good Mood.*

AT Glasgow a Priest with some others, drew about Forty or Fifty *English* and *Scotch* Protestants to be reconciled to the Church of *Rome*; and then he told them: *That they were in good Faith, and for Fear they should turn Hereticks, he with his Companions immediately cut their Throats.*

JOHN NICHOLSON, and Anne his Wife, being receiv'd into the Protection of one Fitz-Patrick, he labour'd to persuade them to go to Mass, and to join in the present Massacre; but they profess'd: *That rather than they would forsake their Religion, they would die upon the Point of the Sword.* Then he would have the Woman burn her Bible; but she told him: *Rather than she would burn her Bible, she would die the Death;* whereupon, the Sabbath Morning after, they were both of them cruelly murder'd. But he that acted this Villainy, was so tormented in his Conscience, and dogged with Apparitions of them, as he conceiv'd, that with inward Horror he pined away.

IN the County of Tipperary near the Silver Works, some of the Papists met with 11 *English* Men, Protestants, 10 Women, and some Children, whom they first stripped of their Cloaths, and then with Stones, Pole-axes, Swords, &c. they massacred them all. This was done on a Sabbath Evening, the Day having been very fair and clear. But just at that Time, God sent a fearful Storm of Thunder, Lightning, Wind, Hail and Rain,

Rain, so that the Murderers themselves confessed, it was a Sign of GOD's Anger against them for this Cruelty; yet they persisted in this bloody Act, hacking, hewing, slashing and stabbing them, so that most of them were cut to Pieces; then tying Withes about their Necks, they threw them into a Hole which they made for that Purpose; yet it pleased GOD, that one *Scotch* and an *English* Man, though they had many grievous Wounds, and were left for dead, after a While revived, and with much Difficulty escaped with their Lives. But as GOD shewed his great Mercy in preserving them, so he shewed his just Judgment upon *Hugh Kennedy*, the Chief of those Murderers, who presently fell into a most desperate Distraction, neither Resting Day nor Night. About eight Days after, he drown'd himself.

IN the County of *Mayo*, about 60 Protestants, whereof 15 were Ministers, were upon Covenant, to be safely conveyed to *Galway* by one *Edmund Burk* and his Soldiers; but by the Way, this *Burk* drew his Sword, teaching thereby the rest of his Company to do the like; and so they began to Massacre these poor Protestants. Some they shot to Death; some they stabb'd with their Skeins (a long Knife so call'd in *Ireland*); some they thrust through with their Pikes, so that very few of them escaped.

IN the Town of *Sligo*, 40 Protestants were stripp'd and lock'd up in a Cellar; and about Midnight a Butcher, provided for the Purpose, was sent in amongst them, who with his Axe knock'd them all on the Head.

IN *Tirawly*, 30 or 40 *English*, who had formerly yielded to go Mass, were put to their Choice whether they would die by the Sword, or be drown'd?

drown'd? They chose the latter, and so being driven to the Sea-side, these Villains with their naked Swords forced them into the Sea; the Mothers with their Children in their Arms wading to the Chin, were afterwards overcome by the Waves, where they all perished.

THE Son of Mr. *Montgomery*, a Minister, aged about fifteen Years, met with one of these Blood-suckers, who had formerly been his School-master, who drew his *Skain* at him, whereupon the Boy said: *Good Master, whip me as much as you will, but do not kill me*; yet he murdered him without all Pity.

IN the Town of *Sligo*, all the Protestants were stripp'd and robb'd of all their Estates: Afterwards they were summoned to go into the Goal, and such as refused, were carried in; and then about Midnight, they were all stripped stark naked, and there some of them being Women great with Child, their Infants thrust out their Arms and Legs at their Wounds; after which execrable Murders, they laid the dead naked Bodies of the Men upon the naked Bodies of the Women in a most immodest Posture, where they left them till the next Day to be looked upon by the *Irish*, who beheld it with great Delight. *Isabel Beard*, great with Child, hearing the lamentable Cries of those that were murdered, ran forth into the Streets where she was murder'd, and next Day was found with the Child's Feet coming out of the Wounds in her Sides. Many others were murder'd in the Streets: But by God's Judgment, the River of *Sligo*, which was before very full of Fish, whereby many were nourished, for a long Time after afforded none at all. A Prior also that had a Hand in the Murder of *Isabel Beard*, and of casting her into the River, presently after fell mad.

ABOUT *Dungannon* were 316 Protestants in the like barbarous Manner murdered: About *Charlemount* above 400: About *Tyre* 206.

ONE *Mac Crew* murdered 31 in one Morning. Two young Villains murder'd 140 poor Women and Children that could make no Resistance. An *Irish* Woman with her own Hands murder'd 45.

AT *Portendown* Bridge were drown'd above 300. At *Lawgh* were drown'd above 200. In another Place 300 were drown'd in one Day. In the Parish of *Killaman* there were murder'd 1200 Protestants.

MANY young Children they cut into Quarters and Gobbets. Eighteen *Scotch* Infants they hang'd upon a Clothier's Tenter-hooks. One fat Man they murder'd and made Candles of his Grease: Of another *Scotch* Man they ript up his Belly, took one End of his small Guts, tied it to a Tree, and forced him round about it till he had drawn them all out of his Body, saying: *That they would try whether a Dog's, or a Scotchman's Guts were the longest.*

BY the Command of Sir *Phelim O Neale*, Mr. *James Maxwell* was drawn out of his Bed, being sick of a Fever, and murder'd: And his Wife being in Child-birth, the Child half born, they stript her stark naked, drove her about a Flight's shot, and drowned her in the Black-water. The like, or worse they did to another *English* Woman in the same Town. They took one Mr. *Watson*, and cutting two Scollops out of his Buttocks, they roasted him Alive. Of a *Scotch* Woman great with Child, they ript up her Belly, cut the Child out of her Womb, and so left it crawling on her Body.

MR.

MR. *Starkey*, School-master at *Armagh*, being above 100 Years old, they stripp'd stark naked; then took two of his Daughters, being Virgins, whom they stripp'd stark naked also, and forced them to lead their aged Father a Quarter of a Mile to a Turf-pit, where they drowned them all three, feeding the Lusts of their Eyes, and Cruelty of their Hearts with the same Object.

THEY used also to send their Children abroad in Troops, armed with long Wattles and Whips, wherewith they used to beat dead Mens Bodies about their privy Members, 'till they beat them off, and then would return very joyful to their Parents, who received them, as it were in Triumph for their good Actions.

SOME of them brake the Back-Bone of a Youth, and left him in the Field. Some Days after he was found, having for Hunger, eaten all the Grass round about him, like a Beast. Yet neither would they kill him out-right, but removed him to a Place of better Pasture; wherein was fulfilled that Saying, *The tender Mercies of the Wicked are Cruelty.*

IN the County of *Antrim* they murder'd 954 *Protestants* in one Morning, and afterwards 1200 more in the same County. Near *Lisnagarvy*, they forced above 24 *Protestants* into a House, and then setting Fire on it, burnt them all, counterfeiting their Outcries in Derision to Others.

SIR *Phelim O Neal* boasted that he had slain above 600 at *Garvagh*; and that he had left neither Man, Woman, nor Child alive in the Baronry of *Munterlong*. In other Places he murder'd above 2000 Persons in their Houses; so that many Houses were filled with dead Bodies.

ABOUT 12,000 were slain in the High Way as they fled towards *Down*. Many died of Famine. Many were starved to Death for Want of Cloaths, being stript of all in a cold Season. Some Thousands were drowned.

THE *English Papists* were nothing inferior to the natural *Irish* in their Cruelty against the *Protestants*, that lived amongst them; yea, they rather exceeded them; for they were never satisfied with their Blood 'till they had seen the last Drop thereof.

ANNE Kinnard testified, that 15 *Protestants* being imprisoned, and their Feet fix'd in the Stocks, a Popish Boy not above fourteen Years old, slew them all in one Night with a *Skain*. Another not above twelve Years old, killed two Women in another Place. An *English Papist* Woman killed seven Men and Women, her Neighbours, in one Morning. And it was usual for the *Papists* Children to murder the *Protestants* Children, and sometimes with their wooden Swords, sharp and heavy, they would venture on People of riper Years.

SOME of these Villians compelled an *English* Woman, who was newly deliver'd of two Children, in her great Pain and Sickneſs to rise from her Bed; then they took one of the Infants that was living, and dash'd out his Brains against the Stones, and afterwards threw him into the River of *Barrow*. The like they did by many other Infants. Many more they hang'd without all Pity.

THE Lord Mont Garret caused divers *English* Soldiers that he had taken about *Kilkenny* to be hanged, hardly suffering them to pray before their Death; they died very patiently, and resolute in the Defence of the *Protestant* Faith; and one of them

them, being an *Irish* Man, had his Life offer'd if he would turn *Papist*, but he rather chose to die, and so was executed with the rest.

SOME of these Persecutors meeting a poor young Girl that was going to see her Friends, they first half hang'd her, and then buried her whilst yet alive.

ONE *Fitz Patrick* enticed a rich Merchant, that was a *Protestant*, to bring all his Goods into his House, promising safely to keep them, and to redeliver them to him. But when he had thus gotten them into his Possession, he took the Merchant and his Wife, and hang'd them both. He did the like to divers others.

A POOR *Protestant* Woman going to *Kilkenny*, with her two Children, upon some Business these bloody Miscreants baited them with Dogs, stabb'd them with *Skains*, and pulled out the Guts of one of the Children, whereby they died. Not far from *Kilkenny*, they took divers Men, Women, and Children and hang'd them. One of the Women, being great with Child, they ripp'd up her Belly as she hung, so that the Child fell out in the Caul alive. They drew some up, and down after they were hang'd, 'till their Bowels were torn out.

IN the Province of *Ulster* alone, 150,000 Persons were murder'd, by different Kinds of Torments and Deaths. And the Number of the Slain, in the other three Provinces, certainly was very great; as may be gather'd from these Passages, found in a general Remonstrance of the distressed *Protestants*, in the Province of *Munster*. *We may (say they) compare our Woe to the saddest Parallel of any Story. Our Churches are demolish'd, or which is worse, profaned by Sacrifices to Idols. Our Habitations*

tions are become ruinous Heaps. No Quality, Age, or Sex were privileged from Massacres, and lingering Deaths, by being robbed, stript naked, and so exposed to Cold and Famine. The famish'd Infants of murder'd Parents swarm our Streets, and for Want of Food, perish before our Faces. All this Cruelty is exercised upon us, we know not for what Cause, Offences, or seeming Provocation, (Sin excepted) saving that we were Protestants. We can make it manifest, That the Depopulations in this Province of Munster, do well near equal those of the whole Kingdom. The Blood of those that were knock'd on the Head, and then thrown into the River at Portendown Bridge, remain'd for a long Time upon the Stones, and could not be wash'd away.

CATHERINE COKE testify'd upon Oath, That when the *Irish* had barbarously drown'd 180 Protestants, Men, Women and Children, at Portendown-Bridge, about nine Days after she saw the Apparition of a Man bolt up right in the River, standing Breast-high, with his Hands lifted up to Heaven, and continuing in that Posture from December to the End of Lent, at which Time some of the *English* Army passing that Way, saw it also; after which it vanish'd away.

ELIZABETH PRICE testify'd upon Oath, That she and other Women, whose Husbands and Children were drown'd in that Place, hearing of these Apparitions, went thither one Evening, and saw one like a Woman rise out of the River Breast-high, her Hair hanging down, which with her Skin, was as white as Snow, often crying out: *Revenge! Revenge! Revenge!* which so affrighted them, that they went their Way.

THERE came a Rogue to a young Woman, who was almost stript naked, bidding her give

him her Money, or he would run her through with his Sword. Her Answer was: *You cannot kill me, except GOD give you Leave.* Whereupon he ran three Times at her naked Body with his drawn Sword, and yet never pierc'd her Skin, whereat he being confounded, went his Way and left her. Divers Women that were present and saw it, attested this Fact.

DIVERS Protestants were thrown into the River of *Belterbert*; and when any of them offer'd to swim to the Land, they were knock'd on the Head with Poles; after which their Bodies were not seen for six Weeks: But after the End thereof, the Murderers coming again that Way, the Bodies came floating up to the very Bridge where they were.





A
NARRATIVE
OF THE
BLOODY CRUELITIES,

Exercised against the

PROTESTANTS of the VALLIES of

Piedmont,

In APRIL, 1655.

UPON *Saturday, April 17, 1655*, whilst the Deputies of the Protestants were detain'd at *Turin*, there arriv'd a great Army at *St. Giovanni*, which was now, with *La Torre*, and all the lower Parts unpeopled, by a late Edict of the Duke of *Savoy*. This Army continued there for some Hours, and in the Dusk of the Evening fell into *La Torre*, where they met with none of the Protestants; only eight or ten Persons, not thinking of an Enemy, were seeking up and down for

Something to satisfy their Hunger. As soon as they came near the Convent, they were saluted with a Volley of Shot, which killed *Giovanni Combe*, and hurt *Peter Restain*, whereupon the rest, seeing the Danger, fled for their Lives.

THE next Day, being the *Sabbath*, the Enemy ranged about, plundering and pillaging all before them. The Day after, their Number being increased to about 15,000, they set upon the Protestants in several Quarters, amongst the little Hills of *St. Giovanni* and *La Torre*. The poor People at length stood in their own Defence, and the Enemy was vigorously opposed on every Side; in one Place by Captain *Jabier*, and in other Places by the Officers of *St. Giovanni*, *Angrogne*, *Roccapiaata*, and their Troops.

TUESDAY, April 20, The Popish Army made three several Attempts to take away the Bell of *St. Giovanni*, and to burn the Church; but the People did so courageously resist them, that they were driven to a shameful Retreat, with the Loss of 50 Men; and had not the Cavalry defended the Plain, they had been utterly routed. Only two of the Protestant Party were slain.

WEDNESDAY, the 21st, which was the fatal Day to the Protestants; the Marquis of *Pianessa* held the Deputies of the Valley of *Lucerne* in Parley 'till Noon, and then entertain'd them with a large Dinner, and sent them away with many fair Promises, that there should be no Hurt done to any. Hereupon the Agents of *Angrogne* bestirred themselves to dissuade their own Party from making the least Resistance. The same did the Agents of *Villars* and *Bobiv*. But no sooner were those Troops enter'd, than they put all to Fire and Sword, slaying all they met with, and that in the

most

most barbarous Manner they could possibly devise. This Extract of a Letter, written by some of those poor Protestants, contains a brief Account of the Barbarities exercis'd upon them.

THE Army having gotten Footing, became very numerous by the Addition of a Multitude of the neighbouring Inhabitants; who hearing that we were given for a Prey to the Plunderers, fell upon us with an impetuous Fury. To these were added a great Number of Out-laws, Prisoners, and other Offenders, who thought hereby to have saved their Souls, and filled their Purses. We were also forced to receive five or six Regiments of the French Army, besides some Irish (to whom as it was said, our Country was promised) and several other Troops of Vagabonds, under a Pretence of coming into the Vallies for fresh Quarters.

THE Multitude being licensed by Pianessa, encouraged by the Monks, and led by our wicked Neighbours, fell upon us with such Violence on every Side, and in so treacherous a Manner, especially in Angrogne, Villars, and Bobio, that in a Moment all was turned into a confused Heap, and the Inhabitants constrained to fly for their Lives, together with their Wives and Little Children; and that not only the Inhabitants of the Plains, but of the Mountains also. Yet all their Diligence was not sufficient to preserve very many of them from Destruction. For in many Places they were so hemm'd in, on every Side, that there was no Way left for their Flight, but they were most inhumanly massacred. In one Place they most cruelly tormented 150 Women and Children, and afterwards chopped off the Heads of some, and dashed out the Brains of others against the Rocks. They took Multitudes of Prisoners; and such of them, from 15 Years of Age and upwards, as refused to go to Mass, they cruelly butcher'd, hanging some, and nailing the

Feet of others to Trees, with their Heads hanging downwards; all which Torments they constantly endured. They made such Havock of all, that there was neither any Cattle nor other Provision left in the Valley of Lucerne, in the Commonalties of St. Giovanni, La Torre, &c. A Franciscan Friar, and another Priest, set Fire to Houses and Churches, so that they left not one of them unburnt. In these Desolations, the Mother was bereaved of her Child, and the Husband of his Wife. Those that were richest amongst us, are forced to beg their Bread. Some are weltering in their own Blood, and deprived of all outward Comforts. There were some Churches in St. Martin's, that were formerly reckoned a Sanctuary to the Persecuted; but they are now commanded to quit those Places, and every Soul of them immediately to depart, without any Respite, and that under Pain of Death.

THE Pretence of these strange Massacres and Cruelties, are, That we are Rebels to the Duke's Commands, in not performing a pure Impossibility, by immediately departing from our Habitations in Bubbiana, Lucerne, Fenile, Bricheras, La Torre, St. Giovanni, and St. Secundo.

*IN a Word, the Cruelties which were there executed, would exceed the Belief of any Man, were they not so fully proved, by the formal Attestations of Eye-witnesses, and by the wofull Cries of so many desolate and poor Wretches, who have been miserably robbed of their Relations, Houses, Lands, and all other Comforts; yea, the formal Oath of one of the chief Commanders of the Army that acted these Cruelties, signed with his own Hand in the Presence of two authentick Witnesses, and the voluntary Confession of one of the Soldiers, who told some of his Comrades, That many Times he had surfeited himself with eating the boiled
Brains*

Brains of the Protestants, is sufficient to confirm the Truth of what is here related.

THE Declaration of Monsieur du Petit Bourg, first Captain of the Regiment of *Gransey*, subscribed with his own Hand, at *Pignerol*, Nov. 27, 1655, in the Presence of two other Commanders.

I *Sieur du Petit Bourg*, being commanded by Prince Thomas, to go and join myself with the Marquiss of *Pianessa*, who was then at *La Torre*; upon my Departure, I was requested by the Ambassador to speak to the Marquiss, and to use my Endeavour to accommodate the Troubles which were amongst those of the Religion, in the Vallies of *Piedmont*, which accordingly I did, entreating him with much Earnestness that he would give Way thereunto, and I doubted not but I should be able to effect it: But he refused this my Request, and that divers Times, notwithstanding all the Endeavours I could possibly use to perswade him thereto; and instead of the least Mitigation, I was Witness to many great Violences, and extreme Cruelties exercised by the Soldiers of *Piedmont*, upon all Sorts, of every Age, Sex, and Condition, whom I saw massacred, dis-member'd, hanged up, burnt, and ravish'd, together with many horrid Confusions, which I beheld with Horror and Regret: And without any Distinction of those that resisted, and such as resisted not, they were used with all Sorts of Inhumanity, their Houses burnt, their Goods plunder'd, and when Prisoners were brought before the said Marquiss, I heard him give Order to give them no Quarter at all, saying: His Highness was resolved to have none of the Religion within his Dominions. And whereas in his Declaration he protests, That there was no Hurt done to any, but during the Fight, nor the least Outrage committed upon any Persons that were not fit to bear Arms: I will maintain that it is
not

not so, having seen with my Eyes many Persons kill'd in cold Blood; as also Women, aged Persons, and young Children, miserably murder'd.

☞ THE ensuing barbarous Cruelties, which were exercised upon divers Members of the *Evangelical Churches*, in the Vallies of *Piedmont*, in the late Massacre, in 1655, are attested by divers Persons of Honour, and Integrity, who were, for the most Part, Eye and Ear Witnesses thereof.

SARAH RASTIGNOLE DES VIGNES, about 60 Years of Age, being overtaken by divers Soldiers, was commanded to say her Prayers, and when she had done, they bad her say, *Jesus, Maria!* which the poor Woman refusing, one of the Soldiers thrust a Sickle into the Lower Part of her Belly, and ript her up to her Navel, and then dragg'd the poor Creature upon the Ground, being half dead, till another came and cut off her Head. The Daughter-in-Law of this poor Woman, who hid herself in the Snow for two Days after, without any Succour, was an Eye-witness thereof.

MARTHA CONSTANTINE, of *Giovanni*, after she had seen several others most cruelly put to Death, was herself first ravish'd, and afterwards had her Breasts cut off; with other shameful Acts of Barbarity used upon her, by some of the Soldiers. These inhuman Wretches fry'd her Breasts, and set them before some of their Comrades, making them believe they were Tripes. When they had eaten a good Part thereof, they told them what it was, which caused a Quarrel amongst them; and they that had eaten thereof, were so sick, that some of them died soon after. This was certified by a Papist, to one *Andrea Javel*, of *Einachia*.

A MAN of *Thrassaniere*, being taken Prisoner, receiv'd divers Stabs in the Soles of his Feet, and in his Ears, by two of the Soldiers, who afterwards cut off his Privy-Members, and then applyed a burning Candle to the Wound, frying it with the Flame thereof, that so the Blood might be stopt, and the Torments of that miserable Creature prolong'd. Then they tore his Nails off with burning Pincers to force him to renounce his Religion. When nothing would do, they tied one of his Legs to a Mule, and dragg'd him through the Streets, 'till he was almost dead; and then binding a Cord about his Head, they twisted it with a Staff 'till his Eyes and Brains dropt out, and then they cast his Carcass into the River.

PETER SIMOND, of *Angrogne*, about eight Years of Age, was tied Neck and Heels together, and in this Posture violently thrown down a fearful Precipice. By the Way he fell upon a cragg'd Branch of a Tree, and hung there in a most languishing Condition for several Days together (a most lamentable Spectacle) being neither able to help himself, nor capable of receiving Help from others; the Precipice being inaccessible.

GIOVANNI ANDREA MICHIALIN, of *La Torre*, being taken Prisoner, escaped miraculously, having first seen three of his Children torn in Pieces Limb from Limb before his Eyes, and the fourth, being about six Weeks old, snatched out of the Mother's Arms, stripped of its Swaddling-Cloaths, and its Brains dashed out against the Rocks.

JACOB PERRIN, an Elder of the Church of *Villars*, and *David* his Brother, being taken Prisoners in their Beds, were carried to *Lucerne*, and cast into the Marquess's Prison, where they were
most

most barbarously and cruelly handled. The Soldiers stripped off the Skin of their Arms and Legs, in long Slices like Leathern Points, 'till the Flesh was left quite bare. After which they were starved to Death in the Prison, and their Carcasses left to rot there.

GIOVANNI PELANCHION, a young Man about twenty-five Years old, having been taken Prisoner, had made his Escape; but being taken again by the Soldiers, they tied one of his Legs to the Tail of a Mule, and so dragged him thro' all the Streets of *Lucerne*. And because the poor Wretch sometimes lifted up his Hands and Head, thro' Pain and Anguish, that he suffered by the grating of his Body against the ragged Flints, the merciless Villains battered and bruised his Body with Stones and Brickbats, crying: *He is possessed with the Devil, which keeps him from dying*. Then, after many strange, shameless, and unheard of Cruelties, they chopt off his Head, and so dragging him to the River's Bank, they left him there unburied.

MAGDALEN, the Daughter of *Peter Fontana*, a beautiful Girl about ten Years old, being taken by some of these lecherous Brutes, because her Body was incapable of being forced in an ordinary Way, they tore her in so inhuman a Manner, that she was afterwards found half dead, wallowing in her own Blood.

A POOR Woman apprehending her Danger, having a sucking Child in the Cradle, took the Child and Cradle upon her Head, and fled. Some of the Soldiers seeing this, pursued her; and she perceiving that she was like to be overtaken, left her Cradle in the Way, supposing that those Butchers could not have such Hearts as to hurt her innocent Babe, and so hid herself in the Cleft of a Rock not far

far off. But these Hell-hounds finding the Infant in the Cradle, took it out, and tore it in Pieces; and afterwards finding the Mother, they first ravished her, and then cut off her Head, and left her dead Body on the Snow.

AT *Villa Nova*, the Daughter of *Moses Long*, about ten Years old, as she was flying upon the Snow, some Soldiers of *Piedmont* took her, broached her upon a Pike, and roasted her Alive with a Fire made upon a broad Stone; and after a While they cut off a Slice of her Flesh, intending to have eaten it; but finding it not well roasted, their Stomachs would not serve them to eat it.

JACOBO MICHELINO, one of the chief Elders of the Church of *Boby*, being taken Prisoner, had his two Hands tied to his Privy Members, and so hung upon a Gate in a shameful Posture. But the Shame was nothing to the Torments; the whole Weight of his Body hanging upon so tender a Part, which caused most exquisite and almost incredible Pain. And this they did to force him to renounce his Religion. When this prevailed not, they took him down, and carried him away amongst other Prisoners. Afterwards, having with incredible Constancy endured a World of other Cruelties, he at last exchanged this Life for a better.

GIOVANNI ROSTAGNAL of *Boby*, being eighty Years old, had his Nose, Ears, and other Parts of his Body, cut off, and was left languishing upon the Snow for a long Time, 'till at last he gave up the Ghost.

DANIEL SALVAGIO and his Wife, *Giovanni Durant*, *Daniel Revel*, *Lodowick* and *Bartholomew Durant*, all Brothers, and *Paolo Reynaud*, being taken

taken by the Soldiers, had their Mouths and Throats stuffed full of Gunpowder, and then Fire being set to it, their Heads were torn all to Pieces.

JACOB DI RONE, a School-Master of *Roras*, being stript stark naked, after they had torn off his Nails with Pincers, and made a thousand Holes in his Hands with the Point of a Dagger, they dragged him, by a Cord fastened about his Middle, thro' *Lucerne*. At almost every Step, one Soldier on one Side cut off a Piece of his Flesh with a Faulchion, and another on the other Side gave him a great Blow with a Staff, crying: *What sayest thou now, Barbet? Wilt thou go to Mass?* To which the poor Creature with admirable Constancy, as long as he was able to speak, answer'd: *Rather Death than the Mass. Dispatch me quickly for the Love of GOD.* A while after came a notorious Cut-Throat, who, as soon as he saw him, cried out: *Lo! here is the Minister of Roras.* With that he gave him a deadly Blow athwart the Head with a Back-Sword. From thence they dragged him to the Bridge; there they cut off his Head, and then threw him into the River.

PAOLO GARNIER of *Roras*, being taken by these Murderers, they first violently pulled out his Eyes, then cut off his privy Members, thrusting his Yard into his Mouth, and in this Posture they expos'd him to publick Scorn for several Days together. Afterwards they flead him Alive, and then cutting his Skin in four Parts, they hung it in the Windows of four of the principal Houses of *Lucerne*.

DANIEL CARDON of *Roccapiata*, being taken by some of the Soldiers, they cut off his Head, took out his Brains, and frying them in a Pan, eat them up. They had cut open his Breast also, and

and were taking out his Heart to fry and eat, but being frightened by some of the poor People's Troops that were coming that Way, they made off.

MARGARET REVEL of *La Cartere*, aged 85 Years: *Mary Di Pravillerm* of *St. Giovanni*, who was blind, aged 90 Years: As also *Madona Lena*, a blind Woman, aged 80 Years; and *Jeanna Batzan*, aged 90 Years, were taken, and in a most barbarous Manner burned Alive.

SOME of these Murderers having taken 11 Men at *Garcigliana*, they heated a Furnace red hot, and forced these poor Creatures to throw one another into it; and when it came to the last Man, they themselves threw him in also.

THESE Sons of Blood pursued and hunted out Multitudes of these poor Protestants amongst the Rocks and Mountains, by the Traces of their bleeding Legs and Feet, which were cut and mangled with the Ice and Flints which they met with in the Way, and having found them, basely murdered them.

FRANCIS, the Son of Mr. *Gros* a Minister, being taken, had his Body cut into small Gobbets, whilst he was Alive, and that in the Presence of his Wife; and then they took two of his small Children, and most inhumanly murdered them.

GIOVANNI PULLIUS, a poor Peasant of *La Torre*, being taken by the Soldiers, after all Manner of Reproaches and Scorns cast upon him by the Friars and others, in Words and Actions, was by the Command of the Marquis of *Pianessa*, dragg'd by the Hangman to a Place near the *Convent* to be hanged. The Marquis commanded the Hangman to place the Ladder against a Tree

and to prepare for his Execution. The Monks and Priests all the While ceased not to use all the Arguments which the Devil and their own wicked Wits could possibly furnish them with, to shake the Faith and Constancy of this poor Creature; yet they could not prevail. Yea, by all his Gestures and Expressions, he shewed the inward Joy of his Soul, that he was *counted worthy to suffer for the Name of Christ*. And when they oft pressed him to remember the sad State that he should leave his Children and Family in, he answer'd: *It is my hearty Prayer to Almighty God, that my Children may follow their Father's Steps, and die like him*. Whereupon, the Priests seeing all their Labour lost, assisted the Hangman to end this poor Man's Life, and quickly turn'd him off the Ladder.

SIEUR *Paulo Clement*, an Elder of the Church of *Rossana*, was shortly after brought to the same Place by the Monks and Priests, and shewed the dead Body of *Pullius*, in Order to scare him from his Principles, and Profession. But he answered them with an undaunted Courage: *You may kill the Body, but you can never be able to prejudice the Soul of a true Believer*. He said to them also: *God will assuredly avenge the innocent Blood that you have spilt*. Having by some Ejaculations prepared to resign up his Soul unto God, he desired the Hangman to do his Work, which he accordingly did.

THREE or four Days after, the Marquis of *Pianessa* coming that Way, one of the Soldiers discharged a Musquet at his dead Body, whereupon there gushed out a Stream of fresh Blood. The Marquis observing this, said to some that were present: *This Blood cries for Vengeance*. Afterwards they took both these dead Bodies, and hung them up naked by one Foot near to *La Torre*, and when any Prisoner of the Protestants passed that Way,

Way, they forced him or her to go and kiss those Parts of them, as might put a like Scorn upon the Living as had been put upon the Dead: But by Reason of the Multitude of Bullets that were shot through them by the Soldiers, they at last fell to Pieces.

MARY, the Widow of *Daniel Pelanchion* of *Villars*, being taken by the Soldiers, after they had basely abused her, they shot her, and then threw her into the River. This poor Woman not being quite dead; with much Pains, got out of the River again. Hoping to be somewhat revived by the warm Sun, she laid her down where it shone. Some of these bloody Villains espying her, they fastened a Rope to her Feet, and dragg'd her to the Bridge, where they hung her up by the Legs, and shot her to Death, afterwards leaving her stark naked upon the Rock.

MARY the Wife of *Daniel Monino* was taken by the Soldiers, who having broken her Jaws in Pieces, they gave her a deep Cut in the Neck, and left her in that languishing Condition, till after having endur'd extreme Torments for divers Days together, she at last yielded up the Ghost.

JACOB BARYDONO, was taken Prisoner at *Villars*, and from thence carried to *La Torre*. There the Tormentors cruelly afflicted him with burning Matches placed between his Fingers, to his Lips, and other Parts of his Body, till he died with the intolerable Pain. Then they caused his dead Corps to be carried out by two of his Fellow-Prisoners, and thrown into the River *Pelice*. But thinking that too honourable a Burying-Place for an *Heretick*, they forced them to fetch it out again, and to lay it on the Brink of the River; where, after they had exposed the same to all

Manner of Ignominies, it was at last eaten up by Dogs.

ISAIAH MONDON had a long Time hid himself in the Cleft of a Rock, where, for many Days together, he had nothing but a few Leaves of unwholsome Herbs to eat. At last he was found out by the Soldiers, and most unmercifully handled by them. From thence they drove him to the Town of *Lucerne*, being half dead. At last, when the poor Creature could march no further, he fell down upon his Knees, and besought them to dispatch him at once; which they accordingly did.

GIOVANNI BARROLINO and his Wife were cast Alive into a Pool, and often plunged and thrust under the Water with Staves and Pitchforks, and at last dispatch'd with Stones.

MARY REVEL receiving a Shot in her Body, fell down, in a Manner dead, yet afterwards she recovered so much Strength as to get upon her Knees; and as she was praying to God, the bloody Enemies dispatched her.

GIOVANAI SALVAGIOT, as he was returning from *Bagnol*, after the Peace was concluded, passed by a Chapel; and because he put not off his Hat, and made Obedience thereto, was murdered, and his Body left unburied.

GIOVANI GAYO, and divers other Men, Women and Children, hid themselves in a Cave, where for a Time they continued in Safety. At last, they were discovered by some of these Bloodhounds; most of whom had been their Neighbours and familiar Acquaintance, and such as had pretended great Friendship to them, whereupon they fell upon their Knees, and begged their Lives of them.

them. But the kindest Salute they could afford their old Acquaintance was with Swords, Muskets, and Pistols. The poor People perceiving this, and not desiring to behold the lamentable Misery of each other, they kneeled down in a Ring, in which Posture they were all shot to Death, and their dead Bodies cut in Pieces.

THERE were very many others, besides those here mentioned, which might have been inserted, whereof some were drowned, some burnt, some slain with the Sword, some shot to Death, some starved, some smothered in the Snow, some pined, some killed with Staves, some cut in Pieces; but I am weary with reckoning up their Names, and I suppose the Reader is tired also with these Cruelties. But tho' their Names are not here, they are written in the Kalender of Heaven, which their Popish Adversaries would have written in the Dust.





A
NARRATIVE

O F

The WAR in the VALLIES of

Piedmont,

On Occasion of the MASSACRE.

IN the former Part you have a faithful Narrative of the bloody Cruelties exercised in the Vallies of *Piedmont*, from *April 17, 1655*, the Day that the Marquis of *Pianessa's* Forces arriv'd at *St. Giovanni*, to the 21st Day of the same Month. During which Time they made such Havock of the poor Protestants, that there was now only the little Commonality of *Roras* which was left entire and untouched. But that they also might in all Things be made like unto their suffering

ing

ing Brethren, and that it might appear the Destruction was designed to be Universal, the Earl of *Christophle* upon that very Day, *April 21*, sent 300 Soldiers secretly by the Way of *Villars*, to surprize them of *Roras*, and to put them all to the Sword. This Party being got upon a little Hill called *Rumer*, belonging to *Roras*; it pleased God, that they were met by some Soldiers, belonging to Captain *Joshua Gianavel* (whom God raised up at that Time as a choice Instrument for the Preservation of the poor scattered Remnant of his People.) These Soldiers were but 7 or 8 in Number, yet having been before-hand placed at a convenient Post to prevent the Inrode of the Enemy, they fired upon them, and plied them so hard, that many of them were kill'd upon the Place, and the rest, supposing by the great Number of Bullets that flew about their Ears, that the Ambuscade consisted of six Times more Men than there really were, they fled back in great Disorder. The others perceiving this, they fell upon their Rear, and chased them at least three Quarters of a League, amongst the Rocks and Woods, doing notable Execution upon them in their Flight.

THE Members of this little Church of *Roras*, to take away all Occasions of Exceptions, presented their Complaints to the Marquis of *Pianessa*; who, that he might have the better Opportunity to deceive, and surprize them, answer'd: That those of his Soldiers that went to *Roras*, were but Robbers and Out-laws, that had wholly disobeyed his Orders; adding, That they had done him a singular Favour in driving them out of their Country; and that he would take a Course to prevent their being disturbed for the future. He then published an Order, whereby he straightly charged his Soldiers, not to molest them in any Kind hereafter. Yet he perfidiously, sent a Party of 500 chosen Men the very

very next Day to put his first bloody Design in Execution.

As these Men were passing over a little Hill of *Roras*, they were so saluted by 11 *Protestant* Musqueteers, and 6 Men with Slings, under the Conduct of Captain *Gianavel*, who had divided them into three Squadrons, that the Enemy was soon put to Flight. This poor Handfull of despicable Men pursued them for a whole League, slaying a great Number of them, without the Loss or Hurt of any one of themselves; which shews the admirable Providence of God.

THE Marquis of *Pianessa*, though he had fail'd this second Time, yet he was resolved to make a third Attempt. And still to deceive them, he made new Promises and Protections, that no Injury should be offer'd them, and that in Regard of the Intercession of the Earl of *Christopble*, their Lord and Patron, he would protect and defend them. Yet, the very Morrow after, he sent a Party of 700 Men, who first seized upon, and secured all the Passes, that none might escape their bloody Hands, and then most barbarously burnt and destroyed whatsoever they met with through all the Commonalty of *Roras*.

HEREUPON, 17 House-keepers, (whose Hearts God had marvellously strengthened and encouraged for their poor Brethren's Preservation, seeing what they must expect, and that nothing but Death and Destruction waited for them, unless some admirable Providence prevented it; as also calling to Mind those singular Deliverances which God had vouchsafed to his antient People the *Jews*) unanimously resolved to cast themselves with their Lives and Estates into the Hands of the same God; resting upon his gracious Promises, and freely submitting

ting to his good Will and Pleasure for the Issue of their Undertaking. The Captain of this valiant Party was the aforesaid *Gianavel*, who marching up with this little Band, suddenly surprized, and carried away their Court of Guard with their Centinel from off a Hill where they were placed. The Enemy being not a little amazed at this bold Attempt, withdrew from the Place where they were, resolving to march through a little Meadow, and so to get to *Villars* or *La Torre*. But being not nimble enough, the others met with them at *Piampra*, and there slew many of them, without the Loss of one of their own Men, and took from them besides, all the Cattle and other Things which they had plunder'd from the neighbouring Places.

PIANESSA seeing all his Designs thus frustrated, and that his specious Promises were but so many Watchwords to bid these poor People stand upon their Guard, he speedily sent to all those of *Lucerne*, *Bubbiana*, *Barges*, *Bagnol*, *Famolas*, *Cavors*, and the adjacent Places, who were able to bear Arms, to come and join with a good Part of his own Army, to environ these poor People on every Side. But tho' the Time of their Rendezvous was punctually assigned them, yet they all came two Hours too late, except the Troop of *Bagnol*, which was conducted by one *Mario*, an inveterate Enemy to the Reformed Churches. *Mario*, with his Regiment of Thieves, Outlaws, and a great Number of *Irish* Rebels, assaulted these poor People on the Upper and Lower Part of the Canton of *Rumer*, who were not above seventeen in Number; yet the LORD was pleased so to encourage them, that they presently got upon the Top of the Mountain, and there, after a long Skirmish, forced their Enemies to retire, and fly as far as the Cliff call'd *Pairo Capello*. In this Fight and Pursuit they killed.

led above sixty of the Enemies, and wounded many more; and many of them being laden with Plunder, fell down, as they fled amongst the Precipices of the Rocks, and were dashed in Pieces. Those of them that were lighter and nimbler, got safe to *Pairo Capello*. But when they came there, they found greater Difficulties to contest with than before, for being closely pursued, and compassed in on every Side, they were forced to take the Ropes wherewith they had bound up their Plunder, and tying them to Shrubs, slid down the Rocks by them, and fell into the River that ran below: By this Means they thought to make their Escape; But by Reason of the Violence of the Torrent, and the great Confusion that was among them, which occasioned one to fall on the Neck of another, and such as could not swim, catching Hold of them that could, the greatest Part of them were drown'd. Capt. *Mario* threw himself into the River amongst the Rest, and had not several of the Soldiers, that could swim excellently well, ventured their Lives to fetch him out, he had gone with the rest to receive present Pay from his Master, whom he so diligently serv'd.

MARIO, having thus escap'd, was carry'd to *Lucerne* in his Shirt, without either Hat or Shoes, like a Man bereav'd of his Wits. Shortly after he fell into a desperate Disease, whereof he died. Before his Death, he oft cry'd out, in a despairing Manner, That he felt a grievous Burning in his Bowels, as a just Judgment upon him, for having burnt so many innocent Persons, and their Habitations.

As the Protestants were marching back to refresh themselves, after this gallant Action, being somewhat weary with their hard Service, they espied another Company of Murderers coming from *Villars*,

lars; whereupon, forgetting their Weariness, they plac'd themselves in Ambuscade. When the Enemy drew near the Place, they perceiv'd some of them; but not being able to discern what Party they were of, by their Colours, they call'd to them **F O R T H E W O R D.** The Protestants answer'd not; but beckon'd to them to come nearer, which they did, in a careless Posture, supposing them to be Friends; and when they came near, the others suddenly discharg'd upon them, and slew many of them upon the Place, and the rest they pursued almost to *La Torre*, and *Villars*. After this Victory, Capt. *Gianavel* rallied his Men on an high Ground, not far off, and caus'd them to kneel down in the very Sight of his Enemies, while he, with a loud Voice, gave Thanks unto the LORD, for his great Mercy, in their Deliverance.

THREE Days after, the Marquiss of *Pianessa*, being highly incens'd by this Success of the Protestants, sent to the People of *Roras*, expressly charging them to change their Religion, within the Space of Twenty-four Hours, and that upon Pain of Death, and having their Houses burnt to the Ground. To this they answer'd: *That they would much rather chuse Death, than obey any such Order.* The Marquiss, vex'd at this resolute Answer, immediately dispatch'd away 8000 Men, besides the *Militia* Forces of the neighbouring Commonalties, who, according to his Order, were divided into three Squadrons; the one to set upon the poor People of *Villars*; another upon the Mountains of *Bagnol*; and the third on that Part which looks towards *Lucerne*. They accordingly did so, and not only murder'd every Man, Woman and Child they met, but exercis'd all Manner of Cruelties upon them; taking much Pleasure in torturing these poor Creatures, and in tossing their little Infants from off their Pikes and Halberds, and

dashing

dashing out their Brains against the Rocks. The Rest almost miraculously escaped their bloody Hands.

WHEN they had thus shewn their Valour upon naked Men, Women, and Infants, and were glutted with the Prey that they found in the Country, they turn'd their Houses into Ashes. Such as survived, they sent Prisoners to *Turin*, amongst whom was the Wife and Children of Captain *Gianavel*. Then they marched back to *Lucerne* with great Joy and Acclamations.

SHORTLY after, *Pianessa* wrote to Captain *Gianavel* promising him great Preferment, if he would change his Religion; otherwise he threatn'd that his Wife and Children should be burnt. He also promis'd a great Sum of Money to any that should bring him the said *Gianavel*, either alive or dead. Captain *Gianavel* return'd the Marquis this Answer: *There is no Torment so violent, nor Death so cruel, that I do not much prefer before the Abjuration of my Religion. All these Promises and Threats do but the more fortify me and strengthen my Faith: As for my Wife and Children, though you have gotten them into your Power, you can but kill their Bodies; and as for their Souls, I recommend them, together with my own, into the Hands of GOD, if He shall suffer me to fall into your Power.*

GIANAVEL having gotten together a small Party of Men upon Part of the *Alps* called *La Pella des Jamies*, on *May 22.* went out in the Evening to a Place about three Leagues off, not far from *Rubiana*. He there first sought God by Prayer, and afterwards informed himself of the Number and Strength of the Enemy. Finding them too many to be attack'd by such a handful of Men, he turned towards *Lucernetta*, where he was furiously assaulted

assaulted by the Garrison of *Lucerne*, but he courageously encountred them without the Loss of one Man; only himself was shot into the Leg, by a Soldier that hid himself behind a Tree, with a Purpose to have slain him. The Captain, perceiving whence the Shot came, lame as he was, he made to the Place, where he quickly dispatched him for his Pains.

WHILST these Things were acting, the *Irish* Rebels in the Marquis's Army thought to make themselves Masters of *Bubiana*, under a Pretence of protecting the Inhabitants against the *Barbets* (as they called the Protestants in Scorn). The Peasants of the Place perceiving their Drift, took Occasion to quarrel with them, and drove them out, killing a great Number of them.

MAY the 26, 1655. Captain *Gianavel* wrote to Captain *Jabier* and the Rest that were retir'd into the Valley of *Lucerne*, to meet at a *Rendezvous* at *Angrogne*, which they accordingly did. The Day after, they marched together to a Place in the Plain called *Garcigliana*, thinking to have enter'd the Town: But they met with a great Party of Horse and Foot, with whom they disputed the Pass a long Time, and at last, being overpower'd, they were forced to retreat. They got six Yoke of Oxen, with several small Cattle, and some Prisoners in the Skirmish, and that with the Loss of only one Man in the Retreat.

MAY 28, They march'd to *St. Secondo*. As soon as they came thither, they first kneeled down, and pray'd for a Blessing upon their Undertaking, and having encourag'd one another, they attack'd the Place with incredible Valour. And the better to secure themselves against their Enemies, who had fortified themselves in Houses, they got Planks,

Barrels, and such other Things as they met with, to keep off the Bullets, which were poured out upon them out of the Houses. They quickly made themselves Masters of the Doors of those Houses, to which they immediately set Fire, and forcing their Entrance, put all the Soldiers they found to the Sword.

THEN they set the Town on Fire, and emptied the Churches, which they found full of their own Goods and Cattle, and carry'd away seven of their Mass-Bells.

AT this Time they slew about 450 of their Enemies, and, amongst others, a whole Company of *Irish* Rebels, who chose rather to be burnt, than to crave Quarter. There were only seven of the Protestants slain, and six or seven slightly wounded.

MONDAY, *June 1*, the Captains *Jabier*, *Laurentio*, *Gianavel*, *Genolat*, *Benet*, and other Officers of the Protestants, went to *Angrogne*, and having called a Council of War, they concluded the next Day to alarm the Enemy at *Briqueras*, and *St. Giovanni*. Accordingly, the Captains *Laurentio* and *Jabier* went by the Way of *Roccapiatte*, that by the Help of the thick Woods, wherein they shrouded themselves, they might the better approach *Briqueras*. Having got upon a little Hill near the Town, Capt. *Laurentio* made a Stand, to hinder any Relief that might be sent them from *St. Secondo*; and Capt. *Jabier* marching down, set Fire to several Houses and Barns.

AT the Sight of this Fire, they of *Briqueras* gave Notice to those of *Cavors*, *Fenile*, *Bubiana*, *Campiglione*, and other neighbouring Places, whereupon the Enemy quickly advanced towards them, and were as soon beaten back. In the mean Time there

there came a Party of Horfe and stood at St. *Secondo*, lest the Reform'd Party should Sally out that Way, really believing, that they had a Design upon *Briqueras*. But *Jabier* march'd with his Company by the Way of *Giovanni*, and *Laurentio* went an higher Way, yet both met at the Place appointed, where Capt. *Gianavel* was engag'd with the Enemies from *Lucerne* and *La Torre*, against whom he had defended himself very stoutly. Then *Jabier* charg'd them on the Flank, and *Laurentio* on the Front, seasonably interposing his Company in that Place, where the Enemy thought to have surrounded *Gianavel*. The Popish Party was soon routed, leaving 150 Men behind them, besides many that were wounded, the Reformed Party having but one slain upon the Place.

JUNE 2d, Three Hundred of the Enemies went from *La Torre*, to fetch a Convoy into the Fort of *Mirebuc*, that lay between the Frontiers of *Dauphiny* and *Piedmont*. *Gianavel*, being at *Malbec*, fell upon them, tho' he had but nine Soldiers with him, and fought a great While with them, to the great Astonishment of his Enemies: But at last he was forced to retreat, yet without the Loss of a Man; only four were slightly wounded.

AFTERWARDS *Gianavel*, with a small Party, march'd to *La Pella des Guienets*, from whence he sent to some that were retired into *Villars*, requiring, that all those of the Reform'd Religion should come within 24 Hours, out of the said Place, where Mass was celebrated; and that upon the Pain of being dealt with as Enemies: And that such, as thro' Weakness had abjur'd, and would persist in their Abjuration, should depart thence upon the same Penalty. Hereupon all the Papists fled presently out of *Villars*, and the Protestants came to *Gianavel*, and such of them as were able

to bear Arms, follow'd him chearfully. The rest contributed according to their Abilities, towards the Maintenance of him, and his Troops. Those, which thro' Frailty had abjur'd their Religion, went over the Mountain into the Valley of *Queires*; yet not long after they return'd, like so many wandering Sheep, to the true Shepherd of their Souls, and testifying their Repentance, were again received into the Bosom of the Church.

AFTER those of *Lucerne* were retreated, the Captains *Jabier* and *Gianavel*, with some Officers, called a Council of War, wherein they resolv'd to sally out, and if it were possible, to surprize those of *La Torre*, most of which were *Irish*. But the Enemy having timely Notice, was so prepared, that they killed some, who had passed the Bridge at *Angrogne*. This so encourag'd them, that they thought to have enclos'd the small Body of the Protestants, and to have cut them off: But after many Assaults, to no Purpose, they were forced to retreat to *La Torre*, with the Loss of many of their Soldiers, besides many others that were dangerously wounded.

THE next Day *Jabier* and *Gianavel* went before *La Torre*, against whom many of the Soldiers came out, but not sallying forth in a full Body, they were all slain upon the Place. Their Captains seeing this, they thought fit to send out no more. The Protestants then retreated towards *Angrogne*, to a Place called *La Verne*, where a few Houses were yet left unburnt.

THEY spent the next Day in reviewing the Army, and holding a Council of War, in which it was resolv'd to send a Party against the Commonalty of *Crusol*; the Inhabitants whereof had made Incurfions upon them, and committed many
Out-

rages in the Beginning of the Massacre. Accordingly they marched all Night, with 495 Men, and passing by *La Torre* undiscover'd, a little after Midnight they arriv'd at *Crusol*, where they took 400 Head of Cattle, 600 Sheep and Goats, with much other Booty, and that without the least Resistance. For the Inhabitants of *Crusol*, being terribly affrighted, had cast themselves into the Mouth of a most fearful Rock, whence they could not be gotten out. The Protestants return'd over one of the *Alps* of *Villars*, and the next Day, towards Evening, they divided the Spoil amongst the Soldiers.

PRESENTLY after their Departure, the Enemy from *Lucerne*, *Cavors*, *Briqueras*, and other Places, to the Number of 800, having heard of their Design against *Crusol*, march'd to their Relief. But finding that they were gone too far to be overtaken, they resolv'd not to lose their Labour, and so fell a plundering the poor People (though their Friends) much worse than the Protestants had done; and afterwards falling out amongst themselves, about dividing the Spoil, they destroy'd one another.

THE very same Day that this Enterprize was had against *Crusol*, the Enemy at *St. Secondo* advanced to burn the rest of the Houses at *Roccapiatta*; and being advanc'd as far as to the little Hill of *Angrogne*, they thought to have surpriz'd the rest of the Forces, left under the Command of *Laurentio*, and *Jabier's* Brother. But they, having timely Intelligence of it, march'd immediately to the Top of the Mountain, with one half of the Soldiery, leaving the other Half under the Command of Captain *Bennet*, of *St. Germain's*, who also took his Post with all possible Expedition upon the said little Hill with 17 of his Men, and placed

the Rest in Ambuscade. But the Enemies Hearts misgiving them, they shamefully retreated.

JUNE 8th, Captain *Gianavel*, being left at *Angrogne* with only his own Company, and some few Others, was assaulted early in the Morning by the Soldiers of *La Torre* and some Others. Of these one Part got upon the Top of the Mountain, and the other Part went to the lower Passage to possess themselves of the Gate of *Angrogne* by the Way of *St. Bartholoméw*, intending suddenly to fall upon *Gianavel* and his small Company, having already devour'd them in their Hopes. But it pleased God that at the Sound of the Trumpet, when all should have fallen on, *Gianavel* soon awak'd, and having first sought God by Prayer, he fell upon the Enemy, and got the Advantage of the Place from them, and after a short Dispute, forced them to turn their Backs, though there were at least 2500 of them. And though all the Captain's Company was not above 300, yet that Handful of Men pursued the Enemy as far as to the Descent of *Angrogne*, into the Woods, and steep Places of the Rocks, where they slew a great Number of them.

GIANAVEL seeing it impossible to think of any further Attempt for the present, entreated *Jahier* to give over for that Day, and to refresh himself and his Soldiers: But he being at that Time more resolute than prudent, refused his good Counsel, and picking out 150 choice Men, marched down into the Plain, where he burnt several of the Houses of those who had formerly burnt and destroyed so many of the Protestants, and brought them away with a good Booty of Cattle and other Goods.

IN the Close of the Day when he thought to have put the finishing Stroke to all his former Undertakings,

dertakings, a Squadron of Horse surrounded him and his 45 Men (for at this Time he had no more with him) at a Country-House, not far from *Of-fac*. He and his Men did all that could possibly be expected from them, killing 3 Captains, with the Commander in chief of the Squadron, but at last, he and 35 of his Followers lost their Lives. The Enemies in great Triumph, cut off Captain *Jabier*'s Head, and the Heads of his Sons, and carried them to *Turin*.

CAPTAIN *Jabier* deserves to be renowned for his great Piety and Zeal for the Service and Honour of God, and the Preservation of his poor afflicted Church. He was of so undaunted a Spirit, that the Terrors of Death, and the most cruel Torments could never affright him. He was as bold as a Lion in his Enterprizes, but meek and humble as a Lamb in the Midst of his Victories. In all his Enterprizes he look'd up to Heaven, from whence he acknowledged all his Help to come; and always recited fit and comfortable Passages out of the Scriptures (wherein he was admirably versed) for the Encouragment of all his Followers, and the Strengthening of their Faith upon all Occasions.

THE Death of so brave a Commander as *Jabier*, and the Wound of *Gianavel*, did not a little startle the Protestants: But yet they did not wholly despond, nor lose their Courage; but assembling shortly after in a Mountain of *Angrogne*, they from thence descended into the Plain, where they were twice assaulted with Violence. The last Assault was by a dangerous Ambuscade of at least 6000 of the Enemies; and they were not above 100. But God of his infinite Goodness so encouraged their Hearts, that they slew very many of their Enemies, and amongst them many principal

pal Officers. The Reformed lost only one *Michael Bertino*, a Serjeant of *Angrogne*, and had but one common Soldier wounded. The Son of *Bertino* seeing his Father fall dead at his Feet, was so far from being discouraged, that he immediately stepp'd into his Father's Place, and said: *Though my Father be dead, yet be of good Courage, my Fellow Soldiers; for GOD is a Father to us all.*

ON Monday following they had a very sharp Dispute at *La Torre*, and near *Tagliaretto*, where they killed and wounded a great Number of their Enemies, without the Loss of any of their own Men. At this Time, the Enemies were reaping their Corn in the Plains of *St. Giovanni*, but they could not carry it away without the Loss of many of their Lives.

ABOUT the same Time there came to the Protestants, one Monsieur *Andrion*, a Major of a Regiment of Horse, with two other Gentlemen that were Strangers, who were followed with some Volunteers, whose friendly Visit of their poor afflicted Brethren, and their good Advice in such a Juncture of Time, was taken very kindly: And God made it a singular Means to uphold the fainting Spirits of some weak Brethren; who seeing others come in to the Help of the LORD against the Mighty, went on with a great deal more Cheerfulness and Alacrity. These staid with them till Peace was concluded.

JULY 11th, Sieur *John Leger*, Pastor of the Church at *St. Giovanni*, (who deserves to be remembered for the great Pains, and many Services he performed in Behalf of the Churches of the Valleys) having Notice, that the Enemies were of Opinion, that he was come back from his Journey, with Arms, Ammunition, and Money, and there-
upon

upon presuming that they would suddenly make some notable Attempt to prevent what they so much feared, went to Colonel *Andrion*, and pressed him to put his Design in Execution.

THE poor People had as yet no standing Army: But the Bands of each Commonalty were quarter'd at a great Distance the one from the other; and they had certainly been cut off every Man of them within a few Days, had not the Centinels being very watchful; and above all, if Captain *Charforan* had not on the one Side timely discover'd the Enemy, and the poor People on the other Side been exceedingly heartned to the Battle by the great Valour and singular Conduct of the Sieurs *Andrion*, *Michelin*, and *Leger*.

THE Enemy was very numerous, having been lately reinforced with many Troops. They encamped themselves within half a League of the Reformed, and early in the Morning they divided themselves into four Brigades, three whereof fell on the Protestants with a marvellous Resolution in three several Places at once: The fourth stood still, ready to succour their Friends if there were Need. The Fight continued at least four Hours without Intermission, and was the sharpest that ever was fought in the open Field. That which made the Enemies more fierce, was, their Hopes to have beaten back the Protestants from their Post, called the *Castelas*; which if they could have effected, they had been certainly Masters of the Valleys of *Perosa*, *St. Martin*, and *Lucerne*. But the poor People having lifted up their Hearts by earnest Supplications to the LORD of Hosts, (as they used to do upon all such Occasions) *Andrion*, and the two other Captains, which he had brought with him, gave forth such Orders as were necessary, encouraging their Men exceedingly, so that they kept

kept their Ground, all save a few, who were either quite tired, or faint for Want of Food, or that wanted Powder, or Flints in the Fire-locks. But these, the Sieurs *Mechelin* and *Leger* employed in rolling down great Stones upon their Enemies Heads as they came to attack them, which proved very successful, doing much Execution upon the Enemy, and causing them to abate much of their Fury. In the Beginning of the Fight, the Enemy cried always: *Advance, advance, ye Reliëts of Jahier*: And the Protestants now began to cry as fast: *Advance, advance, ye Reliëts of St. Secondo*; and withall they ran upon those Murderers like so many Lions, and caused them to turn back, and fly towards *La Torre* and *Lucerne* as fast as they were able, leaving behind them 55 upon the Place, and about 40 that were killed in the Flight; besides many others who were carried either Dead, or dangerously Wounded, to *Lucerne*. They themselves confessed, that in this Encounter they lost at least 300 Men, amongst which were many Officers of a *Bavarian* Regiment.

WHEN such Multitudes of dead, wounded, and dying Men were brought into *Lucerne*, the *Syndick*, who was a Papist, but not so superstitious as many, said to some: *Hitherto the Wolves devoured the Barbets, but now the Barbets devour the Wolves*. Which Words being reported to Monsieur *Marolles*, the Commander of *Lucerne*, he threatned to imprison him, and to give him the *Strappade* for them, which so terrified the poor Man, that he presently sicken'd, and within a few Days died.

Two Days after this, the Enemy being much enraged for their Loss, spread themselves all over *Angrogne*, and began to set the Corn on Fire, which being seen by the Company of *La Torre*, who at that Time were upon the Mountain of
Tag-

Tagliaretto, they speedily gave Notice to those of *St. Giovanni* and *Angrogne*, who hastened thither, and charged them so fiercely, that they forced them to fly, and leave most of their Ammunition behind them. In the mean Time, Captain *Berlin* assaulted the Town of *La Torre*, killed the Centinel and Soldiers upon the Works, and gave the Town such a hot Alarm, that most of them fled towards the River of *Pellice*; and probably if he had had a few more Men with him, he had made himself Master of *La Torre*.

JULY 18th, the General of the Protestants gave Order to fall upon the Town of *La Torre*, which accordingly was put in Execution. *Belin* gave the first Onset, who being followed with many other Officers and Soldiers, they quickly made a considerable Breach in the Garden-wall next to the *Convent*, which so encouraged the rest, that they fell on with an invincible Resolution, and in a short Space burnt both the *Convent* and most of the Town down to the Ground.

IN *May*, 1655, Letters were brought to *Oliver Cromwell*, who then held the Title of Lord Protector of *England*, of the above-mention'd Massacre, whereupon he invited all the People of *England* to seek the LORD by Humiliation and Prayer, and withall, moved them to a liberal Contribution for the Succour of these poor Souls. He sent also Mr. *Samuel Morland*, as his Envoy to the King of *France*, and the Duke of *Savoy*, to mediate on their Behalf. He also wrote to the King of *Denmark*, to the States of the United Provinces, and to the *Evangelical Cantons* of the *Switzers*, requesting all their Mediations in Behalf of these poor People.

MAY 26, Mr. *Morland* set out on his Journey, and on the 1st of *June* he came to the King of *France*, at *La Ferre*, to whom he deliver'd the Lord Protector's Letters, wherein he solicited his Majesty to improve his Power and Interest with the Duke, that the cruel Order might be recalled, and the poor People restored to their antient Liberties and Habitations. Three Days after, the King of *France* return'd an Answer to the Lord Protector's Letter, and Mr. *Morland* proceeded on his Journey to the Court of *Savoy*, and arrived at *Rivole*, where the Court was, *June* 21, and demanded Audience as the Lord Protector's Envoy, which accordingly was granted. At his appearing, he made a Speech in the Behalf of the poor People, and deliver'd the Lord Protector's Letter.

MADAM Royal, the Duke's Mother answer'd: That she could not but extremely applaud the singular Charity of his Highness, the Lord Protector towards their Subjects, whose Condition had been represented to him so exceeding sad, and lamentable, as she perceiv'd by Mr. *Morland's* Discourse it was; yet withall she could not but extremely admire, That Malice should proceed so far, as to cloath their Fatherlike Chastisements of their rebellious Subjects with so black a Character, thereby to render them odious to all their neighbouring Princes and States; especially with so great and powerfull a Prince, as the Lord Protector. She further added: That she doubted not, but when the Truth of all Passages should be made known to him, he would rest satisfied with the Duke's Proceedings; yet, for his Highness's Sake, they would pardon their rebellious Subjects, and grant them such Privileges, and Graces, as would shew the Lord Protector, how great Respect they bare both to his Person and Mediation. Mr. *Morland* was requested

requested withall to go to *Turin*, where, by the Duke's Order, he was entertain'd with all outward Demonstrations of Civility and Respect imaginable.

AFTER a While, Mr. *Morland* press'd for his Dispatch, and when he had got it, according to the Lord Protector's Order, he went to *Geneva*.

THERE was collected in *England* and *Wales*, towards the Relief of these poor People, 38,097*l.* 7*s.* 3*d.* the greatest Part whereof was, at several Times, transmitted to them. What remain'd, being about 9000*l.* was put out to Interest, that so both the Principal, and the Improvement might be disposed of for their best Advantage. The Lord Protector's Intercession had such an Effect, that presently after, the King of *Sweden*, the King of *Denmark*, the States of the *United Provinces*, the Prince Elector *Palatine*, the Elector of *Brandenburg*, the Duke of *Wittenberg*, and many other Protestant Princes, especially the Landgrave of *Hesse*, either by their Letters to the Duke of *Savoy*, or otherwise, declar'd their deep Resentment of the bloody Massacre. They had also many Consolatory Letters, written to them from sundry particular Churches, viz. from *Francfort*, *Zurick*, *Hanau*, *Flushing*, *Middleburg*, &c. and large Contributions were raised for them, according to their respective Abilities. Divers Commissioners were also sent from *England* and *Holland*, to join with those of the *Evangelical Cantons*, for the procuring a well-grounded Peace. But before they came, the *Switzer* Ambassador had concluded a Treaty with the *French* Ambassador; and betwixt them they had huddled up a Peace; the wofull Effects whereof, these poor People were quickly sensible of; and to this Day they labour under heavy Burdens,

VOL. VI. W dens,

dens, laid upon their Shoulders by their *Popish Task-masters*. They forbid them all Manner of Traffick for their Sustenance. They rob them of their Goods and Estates. They drive them from their Habitations, and force them to sell their *Birth-right for a Mess of Pottage*. They banish their Ministers, that the Shepherds being gone, they may the more easily devour the Flock. They ravish their young Women and Maidens. They murder the Innocent as they pass along the Highways on their Business. They continually mock and revile them, and threaten another Massacre, Seven-fold more bloody than the former. Thro' the Malice and Subtilty of their Popish Adversaries, their Vallies are no other than a Dungeon, to which the Fort of *La Torre* serves as a Door, whereby, at their Pleasure, they may let in a Troop of Murderers, utterly to destroy and extirpate those innocent People. And notwithstanding all those large Supplies that have been sent them from *England*, and other *States*, yet so great are the Necessities of those poor, hungry Creatures, and so grievous are the Oppressions of their Popish Adversaries, who lye in Wait to bereave them of whatsoever is given them, that some of them are yet ready ever and anon to eat their own Flesh for Want of Bread. Their Miseries are more sad, and grievous than can be express'd. They are dying, even whilst they live. When that which is collected for them is spent, they must inevitably perish, unless the LORD, in whose Hands are the Hearts of Princes, shall incline the Heart of their Prince to pity those his poor, harmless, and faithful Subjects, who are so far from Thoughts of Rebellion, that could they but enjoy the Freedom of their Consciences in Peace, they would be the first that would be ready to sacrifice their Lives for the Good and Safety of his Royal Highness.

✂ A FULLER Account of these Things, together with the Letters and Transactions about them, may be found fully and faithfully set down by Mr. Samuel Morland, in his *History of the Evangelical Churches in the Vallies of Piedmont.*





A

RELATION

OF THE

Distrest State of the *Protestants*,

In the Great DUKEDOM of

Lithuania,

Presented to the View of all compassionate
CHRISTIANS.

THE fatal and bloody Tragedy, which, with a great Deal of Confusion, hath been acted on the Theatre of *Europe*, for near Forty Years, or upwards, having dash'd most potent Kingdoms, Nations, and Provinces, one against another, hath at last reach'd that most flourishing Kingdom of *Poland*, but especially the Great Dukedom of *Lithuania*; wherein it hath so destroy'd many populous Cities, Towns, and Villages with-
out

out Number; and that in such a Manner, that there are not so much as any Marks left, where they stood before.

THIS is now the 12th Year, since the Righteous Judge of unrighteous Nations, having banished Peace from our Country, hath in his fierce Anger, call'd for many perfidious, cruel, swift, and mighty Nations, to execute his Judgments against us. And these, not having been in the least provoked by us, but only thirsting after our Fortunes, and Blood, have washed their Hands therein, and are not satisfy'd therewith, but have added most exquisite Torments upon the Bodies of the true Professors of Christianity.

IN the Year 1648, when the first Rebellion of the *Cossacks* broke forth, to whom the *Tartarians* readily associated themselves, the Nobility was fought out, with much Diligence, by the furious Rebels, to be slaughter'd. All such, as were not of the *Greek* Religion, were put to Death, without Distinction. There were many numerous Congregations of the Reformed Protestants, whose Ministers were not spared.

THE Cruelty of the furious *Cossacks* was more barbarous, than that of their Associates, the *Tartars* themselves. Infomuch, that they pulled the Skins of many over their Ears, whilst they were alive. Others had their Shin-Bones bor'd through. They made Wounds in the Heads or Bodies of some and poured melted Lead into them. The Eyes of many were pluck'd out. There is no numbering those that were hang'd. And it was accounted a great Mercy, if any had his Head cut off, or if they were sent away as perpetual Slaves to *Turkey*. Poor Parents and Husbands, were forced to look on, whilst their Wives and Daughters were ravish'd.

THIS was the miserable Condition of our Country, and Church, for several Years together, during the Civil Wars. But afterwards, when we all began to hope for better Things, there fell a new, and more strange Calamity. For the *Moscovite*, having taken Notice of the Distraction and Devastation, which by the just Hand of GOD befell us; and that the Strength of *Lithuania*, was decay'd, by continual intestine Wars, he presently took an Opportunity to invade it. Having found out some Pretences of War, he came with an Army of 200,000 Men, and associated to himself 60,000 of the rebellious *Cossacks*; who carry'd all before them, like a Flood, spoiling, burning and destroying all that they met with, sacking the strong Holds and Cities, and leaving not one Corner in all *Lithuania* unsearched. Never was greater Tyranny committed in those Parts before. There was no Regard of Tears, and Lamentations. No Pity shew'd to yielding Persons. All, without Discretion, were cut to Pieces. The common Multitude were slaughter'd out of Hand. The Gentry, and Nobility were carried away; and, upon Deliberation, either hang'd, or burnt alive. Every Corner was filled with Massacres, and the Blood ran like Streams, thro' the Streets of Towns and Cities.

BUT the Condition of the Ministers of *Christ*, was most miserable; for as many as were taken, were, with most exquisite Torments, put to several Kinds of Death.

ADRIAN CHYLINSKY, a very aged Man, and most conspicuous for his Piety and Learning, being surpriz'd at his own House, had his Legs and Hands tied together, and was then roasted alive by slow Degrees, there being only some Chips and Straw gather'd about him. One, nam'd *Smolsky*, together with his Son, both Ministers of *Christ*,
near

near *Vilna*, the chief City of *Lithuania*, had their Heads cruelly saw'd off with a Sickle. Another Minister, in a Town call'd *Holoweyzn*, whose Name was *Slawinskie*, had a new Kind of Torment put upon him. They cut him Piece-meal 'till he died. Many other Ministers were exposed, bound and naked, to the Snow, and extreme cold Air, amongst the high Mountains; which made their noble Souls forsake their miserable Tabernacles. By this Kind of Death, this last Winter, 1500 innocent Souls were destroy'd; who, seeking for Shelter, were in their Flight overtaken. Those, that were most healthy and strong, were sent away to be made Slaves; but others were either slay'd alive, or cut in Pieces. The Number of those, that were thus miserably put to Death, as also the several Kinds of Torments, which poor innocent Creatures were put to, no History can describe.

ONE would think, that the Land had been by this Time chastised sufficiently, and that the sharp Rod of our Correction should have been broken. But GOD was not yet pleased to put a Period to our Calamities; for every Year our Country had a new Enemy raised upon it, and so that Little, which the former had left, the succeeding Enemy devour'd. In the Year 1655, the Multitude of our Enemies was augmented, by the Coming of the *Swede*; whose Armies (by Reason of the Vicinity of these three Provinces, *Prussia*, *Courland*, and *Liefland*, which they had in their Power) have, for the Space of five Years, afflicted our Country also. Without any Respect of the Protestant Religion, they used us as Enemies: And by their coming into the Country, they also made us liable to be more hated by those of the *Roman Religion*, than before.

WHAT

WHAT our native Country, the Church and every Member thereof have suffer'd, in such a long Continuance of our Troubles, amongst so many Eastern, Western, Northern, and other Enemies, cannot be sufficiently lamented, much less uttered. The Dead and Un-born, were then accounted blessed. The weaker Sex was reputed as the most Infortunate. For we have seen so many illustrious, and noble Families so exhausted, and brought to Extremity, that they have not had Bread to eat. We have seen Noblemen, and Matrons, Virgins, and Children of great Parentage, under the Servitude of the *Muscovians, Tartarians, Cossacks*, and Others; under which both they, and many Ministers of the Gospel to this Day do groan heavily.

IN Consideration of those Extremities, which indeed are extraordinary, we cannot but adore the just Judgments of GOD thus poured upon us, by Reason of our Sins, and deplore our sad Condition: And the more by Reason of the small Hopes of Reformation, or Deliverance from such a Devastation. For, though we are brought very low already, having been made subject to many Wastings, great Terrors, and Troubles, as having had Death before our Eyes continually; yet there is still Matter of new Troubles at Home, especially to those that desire to serve GOD in Simplicity, and Purity. To these particularly, one Calamity followeth another, as the Waves, in a tempestuous Sea, come one upon another.

FOR our Parts, we have no other Recourse, but to the Goodness of our GOD, and the Sympathy of the Members of the Church; and therefore following the Practice of the Apostles of *Christ*, and the Example of the Churches in the *Palatinate, Bohemia*

hemia, and others, which being in the same Condition, some few Years ago, implored the Aid of their Fellow-Members of the reformed Protestant Church, we do likewise make our Recourse to your Goodness and Charity. For we are perswaded, that GOD hath in these 'Times made these Kingdoms, and Churches more happy and flourishing, than others; that they might be a Place for Refuge, and a Port of Safety to those, that suffer Ship-wrack for the Name of *Jesus* elsewhere.

John de Kraino Krainski, Minister
of GOD's Word and the Messenger
of the Churches.





THE
PERSECUTION
OF THE
CHURCH of GOD
IN
Poland,

In the Year of our LORD, 1656.

THE All-wise and Holy GOD, whose Ways of Providence are always righteous, though secret and unsearchable, hath made it the constant Lot, and Portion of his People, in this World to follow his Son in bearing his Cross, and suffering Persecutions. For *They that are born after the Flesh*, do always persecute *them that are born after the Spirit*. But scarcely have any Sort of the Churches

Churches Enemies more clearly followed the pernicious Way of *Cain* herein, than *Rome*, *That Mother of Harlots and Abominations*, whose Garments are died red with the Blood of Saints. Amongst those faithful Witnesses, the LORD seemeth very signally to have raised up those Christians, who, (though dispers'd in divers Countries) have been commonly known by the Name of *Waldenses*, who for some Centuries have lived amongst their Enemies as Lambs amongst Wolves, to bear their Testimonies to the Truths of *Christ*, against the Apostasies, and Blasphemies of *Rome*; for which they have been *killed all the Day long, and accounted as Sheep for the Slaughter.*

ONE Part of this little Flock are scatter'd partly in the Vallies of *Piedmont* of whose Sufferings you have had an Account in the preceeding Pages: The other Part in the Kingdoms of *Bohemia* and *Poland*, whose Sufferings, together with the LORD's signal Providences about them, are now to be spoken of.

THESE sometime flourishing Churches were by Degrees worn out by the constant Underminings, and open Outrages of the Antichristian Party. They were first driven out of *Bohemia* into *Poland*. Then after their taking Root, and spreading in *Poland*, they were forced out of their Cities there. At last by the Popish Army, they were persecuted in their few hiding Places with Fire and Sword.

THEIR Ministers were tortured to Death, by cutting out of the Tongues of some, pulling out the Eyes, and cruelly mangling the Bodies of Others. Yet did not their Rage reach only to the Ministers, but to private Persons also; yea, even to Women, and to young Children, whose Heads they

they cut off, and laid them at their dead Mothers Breasts.

NAY their Rage brake out, not only against the Living (not one of whom they spared that fell into their Hands) but also against the Dead, plucking the Bodies of honourable Persons and others out of their Graves, tearing them to Pieces, and exposing them to publick Scorn.

BUT the chief Object of their Fury was the City of *Lesna*. Only the LORD in Mercy having alarm'd the City by the Report of their Enemies Approach, the greatest Part of the Inhabitants saved themselves by Flight, and are now wandring up and down, poor, destitute, afflicted, and naked; the Relation whereof you have in the ensuing Narrative.

ABOVE 700 Years ago, *Mieczislaus*, then Duke of *Poland*, took to Wife the Daughter of *Boleslaus* Duke of *Bohemia*, and together with her received the Christian Faith. It happen'd then that among those of the *Bohemian* Nobility that accompanied him, there was one *Peter de Bernstein*, whom, because he was a Person endowed with many Virtues, *Mieczislaus* was willing to detain in *Poland*; and to that End bestowed upon him rich Possessions, the chief whereof was a Village called *Lezsyna*, (*i. e.* a Grove of Hasle-Trees) upon the very Confines of the lower *Silesia*, 12 Miles distant from *Wratislavia*, 5 from *Glagow*, and 10 from *Posnania*. *Peter de Bernstein* taking his Denomination from this Place of his Residence, according to the Custom of the Nation, he and all his Posterity were called *Lezsynii*, and were afterwards admitted to all Sorts of Dignities in the Realm; so that of this Family there have always been some or other that were Captains, Governors
of

of Castles, Palatines, Marshals, Chancellors, Bishops, or Arch-Bishops, even to this Day. And besides this, for their noble Management of Affairs in several Embassies to the *Roman* Emperor, they were adorned with the Title of Earls of the Empire, which they still enjoy. But *Lezsyna* it self begun by little and little to change its Name, and by Contraction was called *Lefna*, and their *German* Neighbours called it *Lissa*. This Village, something above 100 Years ago, had the Dignity of a Market-Town granted to it by King *Sigismund*, and Tradesmen were invited hither out of *Silesia*, and the Use of the *German* Tongue was brought in with them.

As for Religion, it was reformed at *Lefna* about the same Time, by Count *Andrew*, Palatine of *Bernstein*, according to the Rites of the *Bohemian* Confession, which it hath retained to this Day, and became the Metropolis of the Churches of that Confession, throughout all the Greater *Poland*. After the Year 1620, a very sharp Persecution was raised against the Professors of the Gospel in *Bohemia*; and not long after the Ministers and Nobility being banished, they were fain to seek Refuge in *Poland*, whom the Lord *Raphael de Lefna*, Palatine of *Belfe*, received under his Protection, appointing *Lefna*, *Woldavia*, and *Baranovia* for their Places of Refuge. But forasmuch as the greater Part seated themselves at *Lefna* because of the Nearness thereof, and not long after, a far greater Company flocked thither out of *Silesia* (for there also the Butchery grew wonderful fierce, in the Years 1628 and 1629,) it came to pass, that *Lefna*, by the Addition of many Streets, grew into a large City, having 3 Market-places, 4 Churches, a large School, above 20 Streets, 1600 Houses, 2000 Freemen of the City, and Abundance of other Company. There was built also a very fair

Church for the Service of God, according to the Rites of the *Augustine* Confession, which had over it three Pastors, and a School for the Mother-Tongue, with some School-Masters, besides the Free-School, which had a Learned Man of the fore-mention'd Confession appointed over it, by the Title of *Prorector*.

THE Citizens, having ordered themselves according to the best Policy they could, were able for some Years to maintain Workmen for the compassing of the City about with a Bulwark and Trench, and for the building the Gates with Walls and fair Turrets. Lastly, there was built a very fair Court-house in the Middle of the Market-place of the old City; there was scarce the like in all Great *Poland*, except at *Posnania*. In a Word, Civility, Trading, Merchandize (for all Things were here bought and sold) and Religion so flourished here, that this City did not come behind any City in *Poland* for its admirable Pleasantness. All this was Matter of Joy, not only to those pious Christians that were scatter'd out of several Places for the Gospel's Sake, and here gathered together under the Protection of God, but to others also that came hither from all Parts, as Strangers. But it galled the Enemies of the Gospel extremely, so that it made them leave no Design unassayed for the Overthrow of this City.

AT the first, in the Years 1628 and 1629, they made Use of several Accusations and Slanders to King *Sigismund III.* suggesting, that it was a Confluence of Men, that were Enemies and Traitors to his Majesty. But through the Prudence of that great Senator, the Lord of the Place, whose Wisdom went beyond their Envy, and who knew well enough how to counter-work all Projects of
that

that Kind, all these Arts were at that Time used in vain.

BUT in 1653, after the *Swedes* were broken by the Emperor's Army in *Germany*, and were driven out of *Silesia*, new Plots were hatch'd at *Glogau* to send one or two of the Emperor's Regiments, who should suddenly invade *Lesna*, sack the Town, and put the Inhabitants to the Sword. But it pleased God so to order it, that this Plot was discovered by some of themselves, two Days before the appointed Time, and so vanished into Smoak; though the Smoak of their Devices did not yet cease to rise. For after the Death of the Prince Palatine of *Belse*, when his Estate was divided amongst his Sons, and the County of *Lesna* fell to the Lord *Boguslaus*, his third Son, then newly returned from Travelling, the Plotters were not wanting so to lie in wait, that at last they enticed him to profess Popery. But however they heaped many Honours upon him, yet could they not procure his Hatred of the Professors of the Gospel, and the Dissipation of his Subjects, which was the Thing they hoped for; but he still preserved entire to his *Lesna* those Privileges, both Civil and Religious, which his Father had promis'd or confirm'd to them. They attempted therefore this other Device: The Bishop of *Poznania* ventur'd to redemand the old Parish-Church, because it was of antient Foundation, and pretended that it might not any longer be left to the Use of *Hereticks*. The Lord *Boguslaus* answered: That his Grandfather (*Andrew* Palatine of *Brenstein*) had built another Church for the *Catholicks* (whose Number was very small in the Town, scarce ever above three or four Citizens) to exercise their Religion in, and endowed it with Revenues to that Purpose, that the greater Citizens might enjoy the greater Church. But all was in vain, though he doubled

the Maintenance of the *Roman* Parish-Priest. For in 1652, they brought the Lord Count before the Tribunal of the Realm. The Cause must needs go against him, for the very same Persons were Accusers, Witnesses, and Judges; yet he obtained that this Church should not suddenly be taken from his Subjects, the Inhabitants of old *Lesna*, untill they had built themselves a new one. They presently set about the Building with the Help of foreign Churches: But when the Adversaries saw that it went on a-pace, and that this was like to be bigger than the other (for so great now was the Multitude of Citizens of this Confession, that the old Church was not able to contain them) they began to mutter again, *That this might not be endured, that the Hereticks should have a bigger Church than the Catholicks.*

AT length the Irruption of the *Swedes* into *Poland* in 1655, gave them the long wish'd-for Occasion of rooting out, not only the *Lesnians*, but all the Professors of the Gospel throughout *Poland*. For while the King of *Sweden* was slowly, and dangerously busied in *Prussia*, they took Counsel together for the resuming their Arms, to fight for the Liberty of their Country, and the Catholick Religion, (as they call it) to drive out the *Swedes*, and to root out all the *Dissenters* (as they stil'd the Protestants) in *Gross*.

THAT this their Purpose might make the quicker Progress, and be set on the more strongly, there were Jesuits and Monks sent out every Way, to intimate these Things to the Multitude, and to encourage them to so glorious an Undertaking, compelling those that were slow with the Thunder-bolt of Excommunication, and promising the Relaxation of the Pains of Purgatory, and eternal Rewards to them that were forward. To this End,
King

King *Casimire* being recalled out of *Silesia*, they commanded the Nobility to flock to him, and to give the King of *Sweden* a Meeting in his Return out of *Prussia*. And such was their Success, that in Lower *Poland* a great Number of Families, almost within the Compass of a Month (in *February* and *March*) were miserably Butchered: Men and Women, Young and Old being murder'd without Distinction, all, save such as could escape into the neighbouring Parts of *Hungary*. Most of the Nobility of the Greater *Poland* having retir'd into *Silesia*, began there to gather themselves into small Companies, in the Beginning of *April*, and to break forth; by whose coming, the rest being encouraged, made a great Slaughter of the *Swedes* that were garrison'd in the small Towns, so that General *Muller* was fain to go forth with an Army of *Swedes* to restrain them.

THE Hereditary Lord of *Lefna* was gone into *Prussia* to salute the King of *Sweden*. But about the Beginning of *April* he returned into *Lefna* without seeing him, the King being full of Action, and ranging up and down. This Business procured much more Envy both to himself and the City; as if he had plotted with the *Swedes* against his Country. Therefore they breathed out Flames so much the more fiercely both against him and his City. However there were not wanting such as by private Messages gave him Hope of Pardon; if he would withdraw himself from them. But the Enemies prepared themselves to destroy the City, furnishing themselves with many Sorts of Weapons for that Purpose.

ALTHOUGH the Inhabitants of *Lefna* had Notice by several Messengers, yet a fatal Security prevailed with them to think that there was no Fear of such an Enemy. Upon *Easter Day* a

Party of *Poles* broke into some Territories (belonging to an eminent Professor of the Gospel) near *Lefna*; for whom they made diligent Search; but finding he was from Home (for he had retir'd to *Lefna*) they plunder'd all his Goods, and took his Servant and hanging a great Stone about his Neck, threw him into the River that ran by.

On the third Holy Day in *Easter*, the Report was very hot that the *Swedes* had lost all, and that the King was slain. Upon this News, the Lord *Boguslaus* betook himself to *Wratistavia* in *Silesia*, wherefore the Citizens of *Lefna* were something afraid, although the Commanders of the *Swedes* that were there in the Garrison (being three Colours of Horse) encouraged them: As did also the Administrator of the City and County of *Lefna*, who promised them to stay with them. Being lifted up with this Hope, and the Promises of new Forces to come very suddenly to them, no Man took any Care to get out of the Way, or carry any of his Goods to a safer Place: yet they kept strong Guards Night and Day; sometimes the third Part of the Citizens, and sometimes Half being upon Duty. The *Swedish* Horse also ever and anon made Excursions to see what the Enemy was a doing, and whether they were near. They never brought back any other News, but that there were no Signs of the Enemy appearing. Yea, even that very Day in which the *Poles* came in the Afternoon, the *Swedes* returned with good Booty, but said not a Word of the Enemy.

ABOUT three Days after, upon *Thursday, April 27*, an Army of the *Polonian* Nobility, mixed with a Rout of Peasants, shewed themselves unexpectedly out of the Woods, drew into the open Field, and set themselves within Sight of the City, about five or six Furlongs from the Suburbs.

When

When this was perceived, the Alarm was given, and the Citizens placed themselves on the Walls; yet not knowing who they were, and wondring much, why, according to Custom, they did not send forth a Trumpeter. At length they began their Work with firing a Brick-kiln that stood not far from the Suburbs. Then about 150 of the *Swedish* Troopers which were already mounted and gone out of the City, encounter'd with the Enemy in little Skirmishes, for the Space of two Hours, in which, many of the *Poles*, and some of the *Swedes* were slain. But while the *Swedes* were earnest with the Citizens for Help to defend the Suburbs from burning, about 70 of the younger Citizens were drawn forth, who mixed themselves rashly and confusedly among the Horsemen. When the *Poles* saw this they feigned a Flight, returning towards the Wood: But as soon as they perceived they had drawn them far enough from the Walls, they wheeled about; some fetching a Compass to get behind them and Home, and the rest returning straight, fell on in a full Body. When the *Swedish* Horse saw this, they turned their Backs, leaving the Foot to the Mercy of the Enemy; but the *Poles* followed them so close, that two Colours (which were about 400 Men) passed through the Suburbs to the very Gate, and had enter'd the City it self with them, had not a bold Fellow ventur'd to step in between, and bar the Gate against them, while others of the Citizens sent a Shower of Bullets among them, and so beat them back. The *Poles* being glad to retire (just at Sun-set) they set Fire on the outward Parts of the Suburbs, and burnt some Granaries and Wind-mills; while themselves returned through the Wood to *Oseczno*. The City being thus filled with Fear, spent the whole Night without Sleep; the Men in watching upon the Walls, and the Women in gathering them-

themselves together in the Market-Places, Church-Yards, and other open Places.

WHEN the Morning came, and no Enemy appeared, the Citizens went out to fetch in the Slain to bury them; among whom were found about 40 Citizens, but above 100 *Poles*, and among them their Chief Commander himself, *Cresky*, who formerly had taken Pay under the *Swedish* General *Banier*, and was accounted more expert than the rest. In the mean Time it was hotly reported, That the Administrator of the Country, and many of his Retinue, were gone. Upon this News, the Courage of the Citizens began to fail, and they went to the Senate, to desire Leave to send away their Wives and Children, that if the Enemy should come again, they might be the more courageous in defending themselves, not being daunted with the Outcries and Tears of the Women. Some dissuaded them with good Reasons, saying: That those that should be sent forth under Pretence of convoying the rest, would not return again, and so the rest of the Citizens should be left in greater Fears. But all was in vain. The *Swedish* Commanders endeavour'd to hinder the Flight of the richer Sort, which they could not do, being overcome with the Cries of the Multitude. There were some *Ecclesiasticks* also, who desired Leave to depart for a few Days, because the Antichristian Fury was bent chiefly against them. The Senate left it to their Consciences, Whether in such a Case they could leave the People, when they would most need Instruction and Comfort; especially if wounded and dying. But the others persisted in their Importunity, and there went out, before Noon, 300 Waggon, which were all that could be got in the City.

AFTER

AFTER this, there follow'd some Quietness, with Hopes that the Enemy would return no more, having found, by Experience, how well able the *Leshians* were to defend themselves; and perhaps they had never return'd (as it was known afterwards) had they not been encouraged by that Flight of the Citizens. Two Days after, *April 28*, there was a Letter deliver'd to the Consul from the Commanders of the *Polish* Forces, in which they demanded the Surrender of the City, and gave them Hope of good Usage; but if they would not embrace that Offer, they threaten'd to destroy them with Fire and Sword, having now such an Addition of Foot-Soldiers, that they were able to take the City by Storm.

THEY added moreover, that they had received a Letter from the Lord *Boguslaus*, wherein he intreated them to spare *Leshna* upon their Submission, saying: That he had already given them a Command to set open their Gates. If ever there were any such Command, it must needs have been suppressed by some one, so that the Citizens never knew of it; otherwise they would have provided a little better for the Safety of themselves and their Goods. But so it must needs be, that our Sins (through others Treachery) should be brought to Punishment.

THIS Message of the *Poles* to the Senate, wonderfully daunted the Citizens. For these Things were not kept secret, but before the Council could call together the Senate, and the Commanders of the Soldiery, the Report thereof had run thro' the whole City; as also that there was very little Gunpowder left, and that they had not wherewithall to defend themselves; so that the Citizens being taken with a Panick Fear, cast away their Weapons and Courage together, and betook themselves
to

to Flight; especially when presently after, they, who were on the Guard, discover'd the Body of the Enemies, coming the same Way they came before. These, forsaking every Man his Station, hasten'd home, advising their Wives, Children, and Neighbours to fly, themselves leaving their Weapons on the Walls, or Gates; or afterwards casting them away in the Fields, that they might not be a Burden to them. When the *Swedish* Soldiers saw the Citizens thus in Amaze, and running away, they also soon mounted, not to meet the Enemy (as before) but to run away from them also.

THEN follow'd the Senate, in such a trembling Fit of Fear, that every one run out at the Gate that was next him, or over the very Forts and Ditches; so that in one Hour's Space, a most populous City was left destitute of Inhabitants; save a Company of Sick and aged People, and a few others that could not so suddenly get away, or that for some other Cause were obliged to wait the Issue. All hasten'd to the *Moorish* Woods, by which *Poland* is parted from *Silesia*, in such Confusion, that, when the nearest Passes were not wide enough, they tumbled by Troops to other Passes, that were more remote.

THE *Swedish* Troops went to *Franstad*, and from thence, taking the Garrison along with them, towards *Meseritz*. But the Passage through the *Moors* was very difficult, because the Company crowded one upon another, as if the Enemy were just at their Heels, so that not only many of them stuck in the deep Mud (crying out in vain for Help to those that passed by, every one being solicitous only for his own Preservation) but were also mired and lost. Here Children lost their Parents, and Parents their Children, Wives their Husbands, and one Friend another; so that they could scarce find
one

one another again, in two, three, and four Days Time.

THE Enemy, by a Trumpeter, who was sent to *Posnania* Gate, enquir'd, What the Citizens meant to do? *John Kolechen*, a learned Citizen, and well acquainted with many of the Nobility (who in Confidence of this, having sent away his Wife, adventur'd to stay) came forth, and answer'd: *That the Gates stood open, the Swedish Enemies were gone, and the rest of the Citizens stood to their Courtesy, and desired their Favour.*

A LITTLE after that, the illustrious *Grzymal-towsky*, with many of the Nobility, came to the same Gate, and when *Kolechen*, with another of his Company, had gone out to them, and scarcely perswaded them, that there was no Treachery, they went in. Being disposed in the next fair Houses, they were entertain'd with a noble Supper, and had Plenty of Wine out of *Dlugosse's* Cellar, who was a rich Senator.

WHEN they were half drunk, they set upon *Kolechen*, with Threats, and would have made him their Prisoner; but that he escaped wonderfully out of their Hands, and saved himself by Flight. But they durst not stay all Night in the City, for Fear the *Swedes* and Citizens should set upon them unawares out of some *Ambuscade*; so they return'd to their own Company, and in the Morning they came back, with many Hundred Waggons, killing all they met, and setting themselves to plunder the City. Here you might have seen strange Examples of barbarous Cruelty on one Side, and blockish Folly on the other. For tho' no Man made Resistance, yet like mad Dogs, they flew upon all that either came out, or were drawn out of their Holes wherein they hid had themselves.

OF all that they laid Hold on, they gave not one Man Quarter, but put them to Death with most exquisite Tortures. They endeavour'd to force Mr. *Samuel Cardus*, Pastor of the Church of *Czuertzinen*, to renounce his Religion, after they had taken him, and miserably handled him with all Manner of Cruelty; but he stoutly resisting, they put out his Eyes, and led him about for a Spectacle, then they pull'd off his Fingers-ends with Pincers; but he not yet condescending, they pour'd molten Lead into his Mouth, and at length, while he was yet alive, they clapt his Neck between folding Doors, and violently pulling them together, sever'd his Head from his Body.

THEY took *John Jacobides*, Pastor of the Church of *Dembnick*, and *Alexander Wartens* his Colleague, and another that was in Company with them, and hurried them up and down for divers Hours, and grievously handled them; last of all they cut their Throats, and threw them headlong into a Pit, while they were yet breathing, which had been before-hand prepar'd, and stifled them by throwing down Dung and Dirt upon them. A great while they pursued *Andrew Oxlitius*, a young Man design'd for the Ministry. After long seeking, they at last found him in the open Field, and having taken him, they cut off his Head with a Scythe, chopping it into small Pieces; and the dead Carcass also they slash'd in a barbarous Manner. The same Fate befell *Adam Milta*, a Citizen of *Lefna*. But they more grievously handled an old Man of above 70 Years of Age, whose Name was *Simon Priten*, and many others, whose Names it were too tedious to relate. Of that barbarous Execution which they did upon the weaker Sex, there were besides other Examples, horrid Trophies of Cruelty erected. A pious Matron there, who was the Mother of three Children, not being
able

able quick enough to leave the City, and being slain in the open Street, they cut off her Hands and Feet, and cutting off her Children's Heads, they laid two of them at her Breasts, and the third by her Side. In like Manner, another Woman having her Hands and Feet cut off, and her Tongue cut out, being inclosed and bound in a Sack, liv'd the Space of two Days, making most miserable Lamentations.

THEY pulled out the Eyes of some. Of others they cut off their Noses and Tongues, and their Hands and Feet. Others they stabb'd and slash'd and so butcher'd with innumerable Wounds, that it could not be known who they were. They spar'd not his Highness *Frederick, Landgrave of Hesse*, tho' dead, whom they had slain Half a Year before at *Costena*. He being decently embalmed, was kept laid up in the Chappel of the new Church, upon a Scaffold, 'till he could be conveniently transported to his own Country. They first rifled his Coffin, which was handsomely adorn'd, taking away his Silver and Gilt Keys, and all the Silk that was about it. Then they set upon the Prince's Corpse, and took away his Silk Robe, lined with Ermines, and so left him once again naked, and lying on the Ground. After the burning of the City, his Body was found in the same Place, untouched by the Fire: so he was cloath'd again by the antient *Leshians*, put up in his Coffin, and buried in a certain Place, where he is still honourably kept.

THE mad Rabble, tho' they might have made *Leshna* their Nest, and enrich'd themselves with Plunder; such was their over eager Desire of destroying this hated City, that the very same Day, before Noon, they set Fire to the City and Suburbs, in every Street, (for they brought Waggon's with

them, loaded with Torches, Pitch, Straw, and other combustible Matter) and so destroy'd that most pleasant City, together with all that Abundance of Things that was in it.

THIS Fire lasted three whole Days, and there were those that took Care, that nothing should escape it. For when the new Buildings of the new Churches, did not easily take Fire, they brought Straw, Pitch, and dry Wood, and put under the Roofs and Inside of the Steeples, and so forced them to take Fire. Upon the third Day, (*May 1.*) they came again, and whatsoever was left they set Fire to again. They burnt also the very Windmills, whereof there were Seventy about the City; and a very pleasant Park of the Countess's, which lay close by the Castle; that every Place might be filled with Spectacles of Cruelty, and at length it might come to be said: *En cineres ubi Lesna fuit!*

*Where fairest Lesna stood of old,
Now nought but Ashes we behold!*





THE
PERSECUTION

BY

The Duke *de ALVA*

IN THE

Netherlands.

WHEN the Light of the Gospel was much spread abroad in the *Netherlands*, King *Philip* of *Spain*, sent the Duke *de Alva* with a great Army to root out the Professors of it, who exercised unparallell'd Cruelty against all Sorts of Persons, both of the Nobility and Commons, permitting his Soldiers to ravish honest Matrons and Virgins, many Times causing their Husbands and Parents to stand by and behold it.

THIS Duke, on a Time, boasted at his own Table, That he had been diligent to root out Heresy; and that, besides those, which he had slain in the War, in the Space of six Years he had put above 18,000 Persons into the Hands of the common Hangman.

HIS Son, *Don Frederick*, being sent by him to *Zutphen*, was receiv'd by the Burghers, without any Opposition. He was no sooner enter'd, but he fell to murder, hang and drown many of the Inhabitants, shewing infinite Cruelties upon Wives and Virgins, not sparing Infants. From thence marching to *Naerden* in *Holland*, the Inhabitants made an Agreement with him, and he enter'd the Town peaceably. But never did *Turks* or *Scythians*, commit more abominable Cruelties; for when the Burghers had given the best Entertainment they could to him and his Soldiers, he caus'd it to be proclaim'd, That they should all assemble themselves together in the Chappel of the Hospital, where they should be made acquainted with such Laws, according to which they should hereafter govern themselves. But when these poor People were thus assembled, he commanded his Soldiers to murder them all, without sparing one. The Men were massacred. The Women were first ravish'd, and then murder'd. The Children and Infants had their Throats cut. In some Houses they tied the Inhabitants to Posts, and then set Fire to the Houses, and burnt them alive. So that in the whole Town, neither Man, Wife, Maid, nor Child, old nor young were spared. At last the Town was wholly razed to the Ground.

AFTER this, *Don Frederick* besieg'd *Haerlem*, which held out against him for a long Time, but at last, their Provision being spent, they lived upon the Flesh of Horses, Dogs, Cats, and such like.

At

At last, this also failing them, they were forced to surrender the Town upon Composition, by which they were to pay 240,000 Florins, to redeem themselves and Town from Spoil.

DON *Frederick*, having thus got the Town into his Hands, commanded, That at the Tolling of the great Bell, all the Burghers and Soldiers should bring in their Arms into the State-house: That the Townsmen should go into the Cloyster of *Zyel*, the Women into the Cathedral-Church, and the Soldiers into another Church. This done, all the Ensign-Bearers were singled out and imprison'd, and whilst the poor Burghers were guarded in the Church, the perfidious *Spaniards* plunder'd their Houses. The next Day Don *Frederick* caused 300 Men to be hang'd, and beheaded. The next Day Capt. *Riperda* and his Lieutenant were beheaded, and a godly Minister, call'd *Stembach*, was hang'd, and 247 Soldiers were drown'd in the Sea of *Haerlem*. The next Day a great Number were executed, and the Day following 300 more Soldiers and Burghers lost their Heads, and with them a godly Minister, called *Simon Simonson*. Presently after three of the principal Men lost their Heads, and shortly after all the *English* and *Scotch* were beheaded before the Hospital Door.

In the mean Time a Party of Soldiers that lay without in a Sconce, were all starved to Death.

NOT long before, the strong Town of *Valenciennes*, in *Hanault*, having set up the free Exercise of the reformed Religion amongst them, were besieged by an Army under the Seignior of *Noircarmes*. The Siege lasted about three Months; and the Citizens having no Hopes of Relief, at last treated, and surrender'd the City upon good Conditions. But *Noircarmes*, being enter'd, he kept

the City Gates shut for several Days, and most perfidiously hang'd all the *French* Soldiers, with all the Ministers and Protestant Merchants, and confiscated their Goods.

HITHERTO we have seen an Account of the general Persecution; let us now take a View of some particular Martyrs.

IN 1560, there was in *Flanders*, one *John Herwin*, a Soldier, of a very dissolute Life. God having put it into his Heart to go into *England*, he accordingly came to *London*, in the Beginning of Queen *Elizabeth's* Reign, and by God's good Providence was entertain'd in a Brewer's Family, where both Master and Servants feared God. His Master caused him to go often to the *Dutch* Church, where, by the Ministry of the Word, he first began to taste, and afterwards more and more to increase in the saving Knowledge of *Christ*. And after a While he return'd back into *Flanders*, and was laid wait for by the Popish Bailiff, at *Furne*. This occasion'd his Removal to *Honfcot*. The Bailiff, being informed of him there also, went in the Night, with his Serjeants, and apprehended him. By the Way they met with some Drunkards in the Streets; whereupon the Bailiff said: *They say, we have many Gospellers in this Town, but it little appears by these Disorders.* Herwin hearing him, said: *Is Drunkenness a Sin, Mr. Bailiff?* The Bailiff answer'd: *What of that?* Herwin replied: *Why then do you not commit these Men to Prison, seeing it is your Office to punish Vice, and protect them that fear GOD?* To this the Bailiff answer'd not.

THEN Herwin was put into Prison, where he behav'd himself so vertuously, that every one admired him. Being somewhat long before he was
called

called before the Magistrate, he was much troubled at it, his Heart being inflam'd with an holy Zeal to confess *Jesus Christ* before his Judges. Yet many of the Brethren were very fearfull of him, considering what his former Life had been, and what a Novice he was, as yet, in the Profession of the Gospel.

AT last, according to his Heart's Desire, he was brought before the Sheriff. There was a Priest provided to dispute with him; to whose Questions *Herwin* answer'd, with such Soundness of Judgment and Modesty, that it easily appear'd, he had profited well in *Chriss's* School. He admonished his Judges to examine the Doctrine of the Church of *Rome*, by the true Touchstone of GOD's Word, whereby they might easily see how contrary it was to the Scriptures. Having made a Confession of his Faith, he craved Justice one Way or other; but they still urged him to recant. To which he answer'd: *My Faith is not built upon Man's Opinion, but the LORD hath taught me to eschew Evil, and to do Good.* He was then returned to Prison.

IN Prison he used to recreate himself by singing of Psalms, and the People often flock'd together to the Prison-Door, to hear him. This so enraged the Popish Clergy, that they sought to hinder him from singing; and for this End, they caused two desperate Malefactors to be put into the same Room with him. But within a few Days, these Villains broke Prison and escaped, leaving *Herwin* an Opportunity to escape also; but he, fearing that his Flight might be prejudicial to other godly Persons in the City, upon whom it would be charged, resolved rather to remain there, than to fly. Presently after, News was brought him, that Sentence of Death was pass'd upon him; whereupon he thanked GOD for advancing him to so high an Honour,

Honour, as to be accounted worthy to suffer for his Name. He testify'd the Joy which he felt in his Soul, by a Letter he wrote to the *Brethren*, wherein he exhorted them to Constancy, and Perseverance in the Doctrine of the Truth, which they had receiv'd from GOD. Within a few Days after, he was carried forth to hear his Sentence; at which Time the Magistrate, by earnest Intreaties, and large Promises, sought to bring him to a Recantation; promising, That thereupon he should be presently released. *Herwin*, refusing their Offer of Life, upon those Terms, was bound and carry'd into a Chappel, where they celebrated the Mass; but he, to shew his Detestation of their Idolatry, turn'd his Back, wink'd with his Eyes, and stopp'd his Ears. At the Elevation of the Host, one ask'd him, If *Jesus Christ* was not now between the Priest's Hands? To which he answer'd: *No, He is in Heaven, at the Right Hand of his Father.* Then Sentence of Death was read against him.

As he was going to Execution, he said to the People: *See here, how this wicked World rewards the poor Servants of Jesus Christ. Whilst I was a Drunkard, a Player at Cards and Dice, living in all Dissoluteness and ungodly Behaviour, I was never in Danger of these Bonds; yea, then I was counted a good Fellow, and at that Time, Who but I? But no sooner I began, thro' GOD's Grace, to seek after a godly Life, but presently the World made War upon me, and became mine Enemy. Yet this discouraged me not; for the Servant is not better than his LORD. Seeing they persecuted Him, no Question but they will persecute us.* At the Place of Execution, one gave him his Hand, and comforted him. Then he began to sing the 30th *Psalms*, whereupon a Friar interrupted him, saying: *Oh John, turn, there is yet Time and Space.* The Martyr, disregarding his Words, turned his Back upon him; and some of
the

the Company said to the Friar: *Turn thou, thou Hypocrite.* Then *Herwin* finish'd his Psalm, many joining with him therein. Then said the Friar: *Be not offended good People, to hear this Heretick sing of GOD.* The People answer'd: *Hold thy Peace, thou Balaamite, here is no Body offended.* There were present at least 400, that encourag'd the Martyr to continue to the End, as he had well begun. He answer'd: *Brethren, I fight under the Standard, and in the Quarrel of my great Lord and Captain Jesus Christ.* Then he pray'd, and so went into the Cabbin made with Faggots, saying to the People: *I am now going to be sacrificed. Follow ye me, when GOD of his Goodness shall call you to it.* He was then first strangled, and afterwards burnt to Ashes.

IN 1561, one *John de Boscane* was apprehended in *Antwerp*, who for his Constancy in Religion was condemned to Death. But the Magistrate fearing an Uproar if he should put him to Death publickly, (knowing that he was a Man free of Speech, and beloved of the People) resolved for this Cause to drown him secretly in the Prison. For this End, a Tub with Water was provided, and an Executioner sent to drown him. But the Water was so shallow, and the Martyr so tall, that he could not possibly be drowned therein. Then the Executioner gave him many Wounds and Stabs with a Dagger, and so this holy Martyr ended his Life.

ABOUT the same Time, another Servant of *Jesus Christ*, whose Name was *John de Buissons*, having made a bold Confession of his Faith, was in the same City sentenced to Death: And because they durst not execute him publickly, they sent and beheaded him privately in Prison.

IN 1568, there were apprehended in *Antwerp*, one *Scoblant*, *John de Hues*, and *Joris Coomans*,
who

who being cast into Prison, were very joyful, confessing that nothing befell them, but by GOD's divine Providence. In a Letter, which they wrote to the Brethren, were these Words: *Seeing it is the Will of GOD that we should suffer for his Name, and in the Quarrel of his Gospel, we certify you, dear Brethren, that we are joyfull. And however the Flesh continually rebels against the Spirit, counselling ever and anon according to the Advice of the old Serpent, yet we are all assured, that Christ, who hath bruised, will still bruise the Serpent's Head, and not leave us comfortless. We are indeed sometimes pricked in the Heel; yet we are not discouraged, but keep our Faith close to the Promises of GOD. Be not therefore dismayed for our Bonds and Imprisonment, for it is the good Will of GOD towards us; and therefore we pray that He will give us Grace to persevere constantly unto the End.*

SHORTLY after, Scoblant was brought to his Trial, where he made a good Confession of his Faith, and so was condemn'd. Returning to Prison, he earnestly requested the Jailor that he would not suffer the Friars to come and trouble him: *For, (said he) they can do me no Good, seeing the LORD hath already sealed up the ASSURANCE of my Salvation in my Heart, by his Holy Spirit. I am now going to my Spouse, and putting off this Earthly Mantle, to enter into his Celestial Glory, where I shall be freed from all Superstitions. Would to GOD that I might be the last that these Tyrants should put to Death, and that their Thirst might be so quenched with my Blood, that the poor Church of Christ might henceforth enjoy Rest and Quiet.*

BEFORE he went forth to Execution, he sung the 40th Psalm with his Fellow-Prisoners, then said the LORD's Prayer, and so kissing each other, they commended one another unto GOD with many

ny Tears. Being led forth and tied to the Stake, he was burned Alive, calling upon the Name of the LORD.

JOHN HUES died in Prison, whereupon *Foris* wrote thus to his Friends: *Brethren, I am now left alone, whereas we were three in Number. John Hues is now dead in the LORD: and yet I am not altogether alone, seeing the GOD of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob is with me: He is my exceeding great Reward, and will not fail to reward me so soon as I shall have laid down this Earthly Tabernacle. Pray unto GOD that He will strengthen me to the End; for every Hour I expect the Dissolution of this House of Clay.*

WHEN he was brought before the Judges, and examined of his Faith, he answer'd freely, and proved what he said by the Holy Scriptures. Being asked, whether he was resolved to die for the Faith which he professed? He answer'd: *I will not only venture to give my Body, but my Soul also for the Confirmation of it.* Being condemn'd, he was shortly after burnt, dying with much Comfort.

THE Persecution growing hot in *Flanders*, one *Giles Annick*, and *John* his Son, removed to *Emden*. But by Reason of their sudden Departure, they could not take their Wives with them; whereupon in the Year 1568, they returned back to fetch their Wives, who were at *Renay*. On Account of the Danger, they durst not go into the Town openly, but took up their Lodging in the Evening at an honest Man's House, called *Lewis Meulin*.

THAT very Night, the Enemies had appointed to make a secret Search after such as professed the Gospel. As they passed by this House, they saw the Light of a Candle in it; wherefore they forced open

open the Door, and took these two, together with their Host, Prisoners; GOD having appointed them to bear Witness to his Truth. After they had been in Prison a while, they were all three condemn'd for Hereticks; and presently after *Giles* the Father, was burned. *John* the Son, being fetch'd to Execution, when he saw the Man that first apprehended him, he called to him, saying; *I forgive thee my Death*: And so he, with *Lewis Meulin*, were both beheaded.

ABOUT the same Time there was also a godly Widow apprehended and cast into Prison. Her Crime was, that about two Years before she had suffered a Minister to preach in an Out-house on the back Side of her Dwelling. She was very charitable in relieving the Poor, and every Way shewed the Fruits of a true saving Faith. After seven Months Imprisonment, she was condemn'd to die, and a Priest coming to hear her Confession, she spake to him with such a Divine Grace, and with a Spirit so replenished with Zeal, that he went from her with Tears trickling down his Cheeks, saying: *I came to comfort you, but I have more Need to be comforted of you*. When she was carried to Execution, she went with much Boldness and Joy of Heart, and having her Head cut off, sweetly slept in the LORD.

THERE was also one *Christopher Gauderin*, that at first was brought up under the Abbot of *He-name*; but the Abbot dying, he betook himself to the Weaving of Linnen, and quickly grew expert in his Trade. But having been trained up in a bad School, when the Sabbath came, he spent riotously what he had gotten all the Week. Thro' GOD's Mercy, it so fell out, that a godly Man working with him, would often tell him of the Danger of his present Condition, exhorting him rather

rather to distribute his Gettings to the Poor, assuring him, That if he spent his Money so wastefully, GOD would call him to Account for it. These, with the like Exhortations, wrought so upon him, by the Grace of GOD, that he began to change his Course, and instead of frequenting Taverns, he became a diligent Hearer of Sermons, and gave himself much to reading of the Holy Scriptures; so that not long after, he was called by the Church to the Office of a Deacon, which he discharged carefully and faithfully.

SHORTLY after, having Occasion to go to a Place called *Oudenard*, to distribute some Alms to the Poor there, he was apprehended. The Bailiff, who had formerly seen him in the Abbot's-House, asked him, How he came to turn Heretick? *Nay*, (said he) *I am no Heretick, but a right believing Christian, and what I learned of him, I am now ashamed to remember.*

IN Prison, he had many Disputes about his Faith, which he so maintain'd and defended, by the Word of GOD, that he silenc'd all his Adversaries. Some told him, That he would cast himself away in his Youth, being but 30 Years old. He answer'd: *Man's Life consists but of two Days; the Day of his Birth, and the Day of his Death, and therefore he must needs die once. And for my Part, I am now willing by Death to pass into Eternal Life.*

WHEN News was brought him in the Evening, That he must die the next Day, he retired, and poured out his Soul in Prayer unto GOD, 'till Ten o'Clock. After he had rested, he did the like the next Morning. Having ended his Prayer, he put on a clean Shirt, and washed himself, saying to his Fellow-Prisoners; *Brethren, I am now going to be married; I hope, ere Noon, to drink of the Wine*

of the Kingdom of Heaven. When he came down, he found three other Prisoners that were to suffer with him. These four exhorted and encouraged one another to suffer patiently. Then came a Friar saying; *That he came to convert them.* To whom Christopher said: *Away from us, thou Seducer of Souls, for we have nothing to do with thee.* The Hangman coming to put Gags in their Mouths, one of them said: *What? Shall we not have Liberty at this our last Hour to praise GOD with our Tongues?* Christopher answer'd: *Let not this discourage us, the more Wrong our Enemies do to us, the more Assistance we shall find from GOD;* and so ceased not to comfort them, 'till himself was gagg'd also. Their Sentence was, That they should be hang'd for hearing Sermons; and so with admirable Constancy, they yielded up their Souls to GOD. One of them, being a Woman, was condemn'd to be beheaded, because she had sung Psalms, and exhorted her Neighbours out of the Word of GOD. Her Body was grown very feeble, so that she was caused to sit on a Stool, where she receiv'd three Blows with a Sword; yet she constantly sat 'till she receiv'd the Crown of Martyrdom.

ABOUT the same Time there was in a Town a Mile distant from *Ghent*, a Minister, whom it pleased the LORD to illuminate with the Saving Knowledge of his Gospel. Whereupon he became a diligent and faithfull Preacher of it, both in his Life and Doctrine; yea, he went from House to House, exhorting and comforting every one as he had Occasion, out of the Word of GOD; and above all, labouring with them to beware of the abominable Superstitions of the Papacy. The Popish Clergy of *Ghent*, having Intelligence thereof, fearing lest by this Means, their Doctrine and Authority would come into Contempt, caused him to be apprehended and cast into a dark Hole, where
he

he remain'd bearing his Affliction patiently, and calling upon GOD Night and Day, praising Him for accounting him worthy to suffer for his Name's Sake. Whilst he lay there, many good People came to visit him, receiving such Instructions and Consolations from him, that they could not be drawn to leave him, 'till Necessity enforc'd; neither then could they depart, without Abundance of Tears.

THE Priests and Friars fought by all Means to draw him to a Recantation, but to no Purpose, for he still kept himself close to the Word of GOD, which so vexed them, that at last they procur'd his Condemnation, to be hang'd. The *Spanish* Soldiers, who carry'd him to Execution, would needs have him burn'd, binding him and straining him exceedingly with Cords, and on the Way, abused him shamefully with Mocks and Scoffs, thrusting him forwards, and striking him. The Captain also gave him a Blow on the Face with his Gantlet, which much disfigur'd him. At last they thrust him into a little Cabbin, piled with Faggots, and so burnt him, continually calling upon GOD, 'till he resign'd his Spirit.

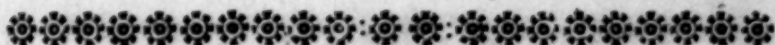
IN 1568, there was a Goldsmith of *Breda*, who had long been a Deacon of the Church in that Place named *Peter Coulogue*. The Church often met in his House, for the Service of GOD. The Popish Adversaries, being much enraged thereat, cast him into Prison; which the Faithfull much grieved at, and endeavour'd to visit and comfort him. The Enemies taking Notice of this, removed him to the Castle. During his Abode there, though all others were excluded from him, yet his Maid-Servant brought him his Food daily, never ceasing to comfort him out of the Word of GOD, as well as she was able; for which, at length, they im-

prisoned her also. This she was right glad of, thinking herself happy to suffer for Righteousness Sake.

NOT long after Coulogue was put to Torment, which he endured patiently. Then they fetched Betkin, the Maid, also to it; whereupon she said: *My Masters, wherefore will you put me to this Torture, seeing I have no Way offended you? If it be for my Faith's Sake, you need not torment me; for as I was never ashamed to make a Confession thereof, no more will I now; but will, if you please, freely shew you my Mind therein.* Yet for all this, they would have her to the Rack, whereupon she again said: *If I must needs suffer this Pain, I pray you give me Leave to call upon my GOD first.* This they consented to; and whilst she was fervently pouring out her Prayers unto GOD, one of the Commissioners was surpriz'd with such a Fear and Terror, that he fell into a Swoon, and could not be recover'd again, by which Means the poor Maid escap'd Racking.

SHORTLY after, they were condemn'd to be burnt, and as they were led to Execution, there was much Lamentation among the People. *Peter and Betkin pray'd earnestly unto GOD to strengthen them, and perfect the good Work that He had begun.* The Courage and Constancy of the Maid so wrought upon many of the People, that not considering the Danger, they brake through the Multitude, embracing the Prisoners, and praising GOD for their Constancy, saying: *Fight manfully, for the Crown is prepared for you.* At the Place of Execution, Betkin, with a chearfull and amiable Countenance, spake thus to the People: *Dear Brethren and Sisters, be always obedient to the Word of GOD, and fear not them that can kill the Body, but have no Power over the Soul. As for me, I am now going*

going to my glorious Spouse, the LORD Jesus Christ. Then falling upon their Knees, they prayed to the LORD with great Devotion. The Executioner, fastening them to the Stake, strangled *Peter*, *Betkin* encouraging him, 'till he yielded up the Ghost, and 'till the Fire had taken Hold of herself. In the Flames she was heard to magnify the LORD, 'till she yielded up her Spirit into his Hands.



6 JY 64





THE
PERSECUTION
OF THE
CHURCH of GOD
IN
Scotland,

Which began in the Year 1527.

MR. PATRICK HAMILTON, of an antient and honourable Family, called *Abbot of Fern*, left *Scotland*, and went to the University of *Wittenberg*, in *Germany*, and became familiar with those great Lights and notable Servants of *Jesus Christ*, *Martin Luther*, and *Phil. Melancthon*, whereby he greatly encreased in godly Knowledge and Learning. From thence he went to
the

the University of *Marpurg*, where he was intimate with other learned Men, especially with *Francis Lambert*, by whose Instigation he was the first that there publickly set up Conclusions to be disputed of concerning Faith and good Works. By Reason of his Learning and Integrity of Life, he was had in Admiration by many Persons; but the Zeal of GOD's Glory did so eat him up, that he could not rest 'till he return'd into his own Country, where the bright Beams of the true Light, which, by GOD's Grace was planted in his Heart, began most abundantly to break forth, as well in publick as in secret.

IN Process of Time, the Fame of his Doctrine troubled the Clergy, and came to the Ears of *James Beton*, Archbishop and Cardinal of *Scotland*, who privately got *Hamilton* to *St. Andrew's*, where, after divers Days Conference, he had his Freedom and Liberty. The Bishop seeming to approve his Doctrine, acknowledged, That in many Things there needed a Reformation in the Church; but withall, fearing that their Kingdom should be endamag'd, they labour'd with the King, who was then young, and much led by them, to go on Pilgrimage to *St. Dothefse*, in *Ross*, that so, by Reason of his Absence, no Intercession might be made to him, for saving the Life of this innocent Servant of *Jesus Christ*, who not suspecting the Malice that lodged in their Hearts, remain'd as a Lamb amongst Wolves.

THE King being gone, Mr. *Hamilton* was seized upon at Night, by the Bishop's Officers, and carried to the Castle, and the Morrow after he was brought forth unto Judgment, and was condemn'd to be burnt for the Testimony of GOD's Truth, in declaring a great *Pilgrimages, Purgatory, Prayer to Saints, &c.*

IMMEDIATELY after Dinner, the Fire was prepared, and he was led to Execution, yet most Men thought that it was only to terrify him, and to cause him to recant. But GOD, for his own Glory, and the Good of his Servants, had otherwise decreed: For he so strengthen'd him, that neither the Love of Life, nor Fear of that cruel Death could once move him to swerve from the Truth which he had professed. At the Place of Execution, he gave to his Servant that had long attended him, his Gown, Coat, Cap, and other Garments, saying: *These will not profit me in the Fire, they will profit thee. After this thou canst receive no Commodity of me, except the Example of my Death, which I pray thee to bear in Mind; for tho' it be bitter to the Flesh, and fearful before Men, yet it is the Entrance into eternal Life, which none shall possess which deny Christ Jesus before this wicked Generation.* And so being tied to the Stake, in the Midst of Coals and Timber, they gave Fire to some Powder, which with the Blast scorch'd his Hand, and the Side of his Face, but neither kill'd him, nor kindled the Wood and Coals; 'till they ran to the Castle for more Powder, and more combustible Matter, which being at last kindled, he cried with a loud Voice, LORD JESUS, receive my Spirit. *How long shall Darkness overwhelm this Realm? And how long wilt thou suffer the Tyranny of these Men?* The Fire was slow, and therefore put him to the greater Torment; but that which most griev'd him, was the Clamour of some wicked Men, set on by the Friars, who continually cry'd: *Turn, thou Heretick; call upon our Lady; say Salve Regina.* To whom he answer'd: *Depart from me, and trouble me not.* And speaking to one Campbell, a Friar, the Ringleader, who still roared on him with great Vehemency, he said to him: *Wicked Man, thou knowest the contrary, and hast confess'd the contrary to me; I appeal thee before the Tribunal Seat of Jesus Christ.* After which

which Words, he resign'd up his Spirit unto God, in the Year 1527. And within a few Days after the said Friar died in a Phrensy, and as one that despaired.

THE said Archbishop and Cardinal convened before him, *David Straton*, a Gentleman, and Mr. *Norman Gourlay*. The first of these having a Fishing-boat that went to Sea, the Bishop of *Murray* demanded Tythe Fish of him, to whom he answered: *That if they would have Tythe of that, which his Servants caught in the Sea, they should take it in the Place where it was caught*, and so caused his Servants to throw the tenth Fish into the Sea again. All this while he had nothing of Religion in him. But when he was hereupon summon'd to answer for *Heresy*, it troubled him exceedingly, and then he began to frequent the Company of such as were Godly, and there appeared a wonderful Change in him; so that whereas before he despised the Word of GOD, now all his Delight was in hearing of it read to him, and he was a vehement Exhorter of all Men to Peace, Concord, and Contempt of the World. He much frequented the Company of the Laird of *Dun Areskin*, whom God in those Days had marvellously illuminated. Hearing that Text read (for he could not read himself) *He that denieth Me before Men, or is ashamed of Me in the Midst of this wicked Generation, I will deny him before my Father and his Holy Angels*. He suddenly, as one revived, fell upon his Knees, and stedfastly lifting up his Eyes and Hands to Heaven, at length burst forth into these Words: O LORD, I have been Wicked, and justly mayest Thou withdraw Thy Grace from me; but LORD, for Thy Mercy's Sake, let me never deny Thee nor Thy Truth for the Fear of Death or any corporal Pain. Being afterwards, together with Mr. *Gourlay* brought to Judgment in *Holy-rood-House*, (the King himself being present) much

much Means was used to draw this *David Straton* to make a Recantation; but he persever'd in his Constancy, and so they were both condemn'd to the Fire, and after Dinner, in the Year 1534, they were first hang'd, and afterwards burnt.

IN the Year 1539, there were apprehended *Jerome Ruffel*, a Man of a meek and quiet Nature, and *Alexander Kennedy* of about eighteen Years old. These two poor Servants of *Jesus Christ* being brought before the Archbishop and his Associates to Judgment, *Kennedy* at first was faint, and would fain have recanted; but when all Place of Repentance was denied him, the Spirit of GOD (which seasonably comes in with Comfort) began to refresh him; and his inward Comfort began to appear, as well by his Visage, as by his Tongue and Words: For with a chearful Countenance and joyful Voice, falling on his Knees, he said: *O eternal GOD, how wonderful is that Love and Mercy that Thou bearest unto Mankind, and to me a vile Sinner and miserable Wretch above all others! For even now when I would have denied Thee, and thy Son our LORD Jesus Christ, my only Saviour, and so have cast my self into everlasting Damnation, thou by thine own Hand hast pulled me from the very Bottom of Hell, and madst me to feel that Heavenly Comfort which takes from me that ungodly Fear wherewith I was oppressed before. Now I defy Death, do with me what you please. I praise GOD I am ready.* Then they rail'd upon him and *Ruffel*, who replied: *This is your Hour and Power of Darknes. Now ye sit as Judges, and we stand wrongfully accused, and more wrongfully to be condemned. But the Day will come when our Innocency will appear, and ye shall see your own Blindness, to your everlasting Confusion. Go forward and fulfill the Measure of your Iniquity.* Shortly after, they were condemn'd to die. As they went to Execution, *Ruf-*
sel.

sel comforted Kennedy, saying: *Brother, fear not; greater is he that is in us, than he that is in the World. The Pain that we are to suffer is short, and shall be light, but our Joy and Consolation shall never have an End. Let us therefore strive to enter into our Master and Saviour's Joy, by the same straight Way which He hath taken before us. Death cannot hurt us, for it is already destroyed by Him for whose Sake we now suffer.* Thus passing chearfully on, they constantly triumphed over Death and Satan in the Midst of the flaming Fire, where they gave up their Spirits to GOD.

GEORGE WISEHEART OF WISCHARD, was born in *Scotland*, and brought up first at School, from whence he went to the University; after which he travelled into several Countries, and at last came to *Cambridge*, where he was admitted into *Bennet's College*. He was tall of Stature, and of a melancholy Constitution; he had black Hair, a long Beard, was comely of Personage, well-spoken, courteous, lowly, lovely, willing to teach, and desirous to learn. For his Habit, he wore a Frize Gown, a black Fustian Doublet, plain Hose, course Canvas for his Shirts, falling Bands. All which Apparel he gave to the Poor, some Weekly, some Monthly, some Quarterly; saving a *French Cap* that he wore, which he kept a Twelve-Month. He was modest, temperate, fearing GOD, hating Covetousness. His Charity was extraordinary, he forbore his Food one Meal in three, one Day in four, that he might the better relieve the Poor. His Lodging was upon Straw, and he had coarse new Canvas Sheets, which when once foul, he gave away. He had by his Bed-side a Tub of Water, in which, in the dark Night, he bathed himself; he taught with great Modesty and Gravity, so that some about him thought him severe, and would have slain him; but the LORD was his De-

Deliverer; and he, after due Correction for their Malice, by good Exhortation amended them. His Learning was no less sufficient than his Desire of it. He was always ready to do Good to his Ability. Both in his private Chamber and publick Schools, he read divers Authors, yea, he always studied how to do Good to all.

IN 1544, some of the Nobility of Scotland, coming to treat with King *Henry VIII.* about the Marriage between his Son Prince *Edward*, and their Young Queen *Mary*, at their Return, Mr. *Wischard* went with them into Scotland, being a Man of admirable Graces, and Learning both in Divine and Human Sciences. He first preached in *Rosse*, and then in *Dundee*, where with great Admiration of all that heard him, he went over the Epistle to the *Romans*, till at the Instigation of the Cardinal, one *Robert Misse*, a principal Man there, and formerly a Professor of Religion, inhibited him from preaching, requiring him that he should trouble their Town no more, for he would not suffer it. This was spoken to him in the publick Place; whereupon he mused a Space, with his Eyes bent unto Heaven, and afterwards looking sorrowfully upon the Speaker and the People, he said, *GOD is my Witness that I never intended your Trouble, but your Comfort; yea your Trouble is more dolorous to me than it is to your selves. But I am assured that to refuse GOD's Word, and to chase his Messenger from you, shall not preserve you from Trouble, but shall bring you into it. For GOD shall send you Ministers that shall neither fear Burning nor Banishment. I have offered you the Word of Salvation. With the Hazard of my Life I have remained amongst you. Now ye your selves refuse me, and I must leave my Innocency to be declared by my GOD. If it be long prosperous with you, I am not led by the Spirit of Truth. But if unlooked for Trouble come upon*

upon you, acknowledge the Cause, and turn to GOD, who is gracious and merciful. But if you turn not at the first Warning, he will visit you with Fire and Sword. Then he came down from the Pulpit. Some Noblemen being present, would have persuaded him to stay, or to have gone with them into the Country, but he would by no Means stay till he had past the River Tay.

THEN he went into the West-Country, where he made Offers of GOD's Word, which was gladly receiv'd by Many, 'till the Bishop of Glasgow, by the Instigation of the Cardinal, came with his Train to the Town of Ayre to resist Wischard: The Earl of Glencarne and some other Gentlemen hearing of it, came thither also with their Retinue, and when they were all come together, the Bishop would needs have the Church himself to preach in. Some opposed; but Wischard said, *Let him alone, his Sermon will not do much Hurt, let us go to the Market-Cross*, and so they did, where he made so notable a Sermon, that his very Enemies themselves were confounded.

WISCHARD remained with the Gentlemen in Kyle, preaching sometimes in one Place, sometimes in another, but coming to Machlene, he was perforce kept out of the Church. Some would have broken in, but he said to one of them: *Brother, Jesus Christ is as mighty in the Fields as in the Church, and Himself often preached in the Desert; at the Sea-Side, and other Places. It is the Word of Peace GOD sends by me: The Blood of None shall be shed this Day for the preaching of it.* And so going into the Fields, he stood upon a Bank, where he continued preaching to the People above three Hours; and GOD wrought so wonderfully by that Sermon, that one of the most wicked Men in all the Country, the Laird of Sheld was converted.

ed by it, and his Eyes ran down with such Abundance of Tears, that all Men wondred at it. Presently News was brought to *Wischard* that the Plague was broke out in *Dundee*, which began within four Days after he was prohibited from preaching there, and raged so extreemly, that it is beyond Credit how many died in 24 Hours Space. This being related to him, notwithstanding the Importunity of his Friends, he would needs go thither, saying, *They are now in Trouble, and need Comfort. Perhaps this Hand of GOD will make them now to magnify and reverence the Word of GOD, which before they lightly esteemed.*

COMING to *Dundee*, the Joy of the Faithful was exceeding great, and he signified without Delay that he would preach the next Day. And because most of the Inhabitants were either sick, or employed about the Sick, he chose the East Gate for the Place of his preaching, so that the Whole were within, and the Sick without the Gate. His Text was *Psal. 107. He sent his Word and healed them*, wherein he comfortably treated of the Profit and Comfort of GOD's Word, the Punishment that comes by the Contempt of it, the Readiness of GOD's Mercy to such as truly turn to him, and the Happiness of those whom GOD takes from this Misery. This Sermon so raised up the Hearts of those that heard him, that they regarded no Death, but judged them more happy that should then depart, than such as should remain behind; considering that they knew not whether they should have such a Comforter with them, yea or no. He spared not to visit them that lay in the greatest Extremity, and to comfort them. He provided all Things necessary for such as could take Food, the Town being very bountiful to them, through his Instigation. But whilst he was thus busying himself for the Comfort of the Afflicted, the Devil stirred

red up Cardinal *Beton*, who corrupted a desperate Popish Priest, called *John Weighton*, to slay him. And on a Day, the Sermon being ended, and the People departed, suspecting no Danger, the Priest stood waiting at the Bottom of the Stairs with a naked Dagger in his Hand, under his Gown; but Mr. *Wischard*, being of a sharp piercing Eye, seeing the Priest as he came down, said to him, *My Friend what would you have?* and withall clapping his Hand upon the Dagger, took it from him. The Priest being herewith terrified, fell down upon his Knees, confessed his Intention, and craved Pardon. A Noise being hereupon raised, and it coming to the Ears of those which had been sick, they cried: *Deliver the Traitor to us, or we will take him by Force;* and so they burst in at the Gate; but *Wischard* taking him in his Arms, said, *Whosoever hurts him shall hurt me; for he hath done me no Mischief, but much Good, by teaching me more Heedfulness for the Time to come:* And so he appeased them, and saved the Priest's Life.

WHEN the Plague was almost ceased, he took his Leave of them, saying, *That God had almost put an End to the Battle, and that he was now called to another Place.* For the Gentlemen of the West had written to him to meet them in *Edinburgh*, where he should dispute with the Bishops, and should be publicly heard, which he willingly assented to. But first he went to *Montrosse*, to salute the Church there, where he sometimes preached, but spent most of his Time in private Meditation, in which he was so earnest, that he continued Day and Night in it; during which Time, the Cardinal again conspired his Death, causing a Letter to be sent to him, as if it had been from his familiar Friend, the Laird of *Kinnur*, desiring him with all possible Speed to come to him, for that he was taken with a sudden Sickness. In the mean

Time he had provided 60 armed Men to lie in Wait within a Mile and an Half of *Montrosse* to murder him as he passed by that Way. The Letter coming to his Hands by a Boy, who also brought him an Horse to ride on, being accompanied with some honest Men his Friends, he set forwards; but suddenly stopping and musing a Space, he returned back again, which they wondering at, asked him the Cause; to whom he said, *I will not go. I am forbidden of GOD. I am assured there is Treason. Let some of you go to yonder Place and tell me what you find;* which they doing, found out the Treason, and hastily returning back, they told Mr. *Wisehard* of it, whereupon he said; *I know that I shall end my Life by that Blood-thirsty Man's Hands, but it will not be in this Manner.*

THE Time approaching wherein he should meet the Gentlemen at *Edinburgh*, he took his Leave and departed. By the Way he lodg'd with a faithful Brother called *James Watson* of *Inner Gowry*. In the Night Time he gat up and went into a Yard; which two Men hearing, privily followed him. There he walked in an Alley for some Space, breathing forth many Sobs and deep Groans, then he fell upon his Knees, and his Groans encreased. Then he fell upon his Face. Those that watched him, heard him weeping and praying, in which Posture he continued near an Hour. Then getting up, he came to his Bed again. Those which attended him, making as though they were ignorant of all, came and asked him where he had been? But he would not answer them. The next Day they importuned him again, saying, *Be plain with us, for we heard your Mourning, and saw your Gestures.* Then he with a dejected Countenance, said, *I had rather you had been in your Beds.* But they still pressing upon him to know something; He said, *I will tell you; I am assured that my Warfare*

fare is near at an End, and therefore pray to GOD with me that I shrink not when the Battle waxeth most hot. When they heard this, they fell a weeping, saying, This is small Comfort to us. Then said he, GOD shall send you Comfort after me. This Realm shall be illuminated with the Light of Christ's Gospel as clearly as any Realm since the Days of the Apostles. The House of GOD shall be built in it, in Despite of all Enemies. Neither will it be long before this be accomplished. Many shall not suffer after me, 'till the Glory of GOD shall appear and triumph in Despite of Satan. But alas! If the People shall afterwards prove unthankful, then fearful and terrible shall the Plagues be that shall follow.

THEN he went forward on his Journey, and came to *Leith*, but hearing nothing of those Gentlemen that were to meet him, he kept himself private a Day or two: At which Time he grew very pensive, and being asked the Reason of it, he said: *What do I differ from a dead Man, but that I eat and drink? Hitherto GOD hath used my Labours for the Instruction of others, and to the Disclosing of Darknes, and now I lurk as a Man ashamed, that dare not shew his Face.* Hereby they perceived that his Desire was to preach, whereupon they said to him: *It's most comfortable to us to hear you; but because we know the Danger wherein you stand, we dare not desire it.* But, (said he) if you dare hear, let GOD provide for me, as best pleaseth Him; and so it was concluded, that the next Day he should preach in *Leith*. His Text was the *Parable of the Sower*, Matt. xiii. The Sermon ended, the Gentlemen of *Lothian*, who were earnest Professors of *Jesus Christ*, would not suffer him to stay at *Leith*, because the Governor and Cardinal were shortly to come to *Edinburgh*, but took him along with them, and so he preach'd at *Brunstone*, *Languedine*, and *Ormstone*. Then he was request-

ed to preach at *Enereſk*, near *Muſſelburgh*, where he had a great Confluence of People, and amongſt them Sir *George Douglas*, who, after Sermon, ſaid publickly: *I know that the Governor and Cardinal will hear that I have been at this Sermon. But let them know that I will avow it, and will maintain both the Doctrines, and the Preacher, to the uttermoſt of my Power.* This much rejoiced thoſe that were preſent.

AMONGST others that came to hear him preach, there were two *Grey-Friars*, who, ſtanding at the Church-Door, whiſper'd to ſuch as came in; Which *Wiſchard* obſerving, ſaid to the People: *I pray you make Room for theſe two Men, it may be they come to learn.* And turning to them, he ſaid: *Come near, for I aſſure you, you ſhall hear the Word of Truth, which this Day ſhall ſeal up to you either your Salvation or Damnation; and ſo he proceeded in his Sermon, ſuppoſing that all would be quiet. But when he perceiv'd, that they ſtill continued to diſturb all the People that ſtood near them, he ſaid to them the ſecond Time, with an angry Countenance: O Miniſters of Satan, and Deceivers of the Souls of Men! Will ye neither hear GOD's Truth yourſelves, nor ſuffer others to hear it? Depart and take this for your Portion; GOD ſhall ſhortly confound and diſcloſe your Hypocriſy within this Kingdom. Ye ſhall be abominable to Men, and your Places and Habitations ſhall be deſolate.* This he ſpoke with much Vehemency, and turning to the People, he ſaid: *Theſe Men have provoked the Spirit of GOD to Anger; and then he proceeded to the End of his Sermon.*

AFTERWARDS he preach'd in divers other Places, the People much flocking after him. In all his Sermons, he foretold the Shortneſs of Time that he

he had to travel, and the near Approach of his Death.

COMING to *Haddington*, his Auditory began much to decrease. The Cause, as it was conceiv'd, was this; the Earl *Bothwell*, who had great Observance in those Parts, by the Instigation of the Cardinal, had inhibited both those of the Town and Country from hearing him. Presently after, as he was going to Church, he receiv'd a Letter from the *West-Country Gentlemen*, and having read it, he called *John Knox*, who had diligently waited upon him since he came into *Lothian*, to whom he said: *I am now weary of the World, because I see that Men begin to be weary of GOD. For* (added he) *the Gentlemen of the West have sent me Word, That they cannot keep their Meeting at Edinburgh.* *John Knox*, wondering that he should enter into Conference about these Things so immediately before his Sermon, contrary to his Custom, said to him: *Sir, Sermon-time approaches, I will leave you for the present to your Meditations.* Then Mr. *Wischard* walk'd up and down about Half an Hour, his sad Countenance declaring the Grief of his Mind. At last he went into the Pulpit, and his Auditory being very small, he began on this Manner: *LORD, how long shall it be that thy Holy Word shall be despised, and Men shall not regard their own Salvation? I have heard of thee, O Haddington, that in thee there used to be two or three Thousand Persons, at a vain and wicked Play; and now to hear the Messenger of the eternal GOD, of all the Parish scarce one Hundred can here be number'd. Sore and fearful shall be the Plagues that shall ensue upon this thy Contempt. With Fire and Sword shalt thou be plagued; yea, thou Haddington in Special, Strangers shall possess thee; and you, the present Inhabitants, shall either serve your Enemies in Bondage, or else you shall be chased from your own Habitations, and that*
because

because you have not known, nor will know the Time of your Visitation.

THIS Prophecy was accomplish'd not long after, when the *English* took *Haddington*; made it a Garrison; enforced many of the Inhabitants to fly; oppress'd others; and after a While, a great Plague breaking forth in the Town, whereof Multitudes died, the *English* were at last forced to quit it, who, at their Departure, burnt and spoiled a great Part of it, leaving it to be possessed by such as could first seize upon it, which were the *French* that came as Auxiliaries to *Scotland*, with a few of the antient Inhabitants; so that *Haddington*, to this Day, never recover'd her former Beauty, nor yet Men of such Wisdom and Ability, as did formerly inhabit it.

THAT Night Mr. *Wischard* was apprehended in the House of *Ormeiston*, by the Earl *Bothwel*, suborned thereunto by the Cardinal. The Manner was thus: After Sermon he took his last Farewell of all his Friends in *Haddington*. *John Knox* would fain have gone with him; but he said: *Return to your Children, and GOD bless you. One is sufficient for one Sacrifice.* Then he went to the Laird of *Ormeiston's*, with some others that accompanied him. After Supper he held a comfortable Discourse of GOD's Love to his Children: Then he appointed the 51st *Psalms* to be sung, and so retired to his Chamber.

BEFORE Midnight the House was beset; and the Earl *Bothwel* call'd for the Laird of the House, and told him, That it was in vain to resist, for the Governor and Cardinal were within a Mile, with a great Power. But if he would deliver Mr. *Wischard* to him, he would promise, upon his Honour, that he should be safe, and that the Cardinal should not

not hurt him. Mr. *Wischarde* said: Open the Gates, the Will of GOD be done. *Bothwel* coming in, *Wischarde* said to him: I praise my GOD, that so honourable a Man as you, my Lord, receive me this Night; for I am persuaded, that for your Honour's Sake, you will suffer nothing to be done to me, but by Order of Law? I less fear to die openly, than secretly to be murdered. Then *Bothwel* said: I will not only preserve your Body from all Violence that shall be intended against you without Order of Law, but I also promise, in the Presence of these Gentlemen, that neither the Governor nor Cardinal shall have their Will of you, but I will keep you in mine own House, till I either set you free, or restore you to the same Place where I receive you. Then said the Lairds: My Lord, if you make good your Promise, which we presume you will, we ourselves will not only serve you, but we will procure all the Professors in Lothian to do the same. These Promises being made in the Presence of GOD, and Hands being stricken by both Parties, the Earl took Mr. *Wischarde*, and so departed.

Mr. *Wischarde* was carry'd to *Edinburgh*; but Gold and Women easily corrupt fleshly Men; for the Cardinal gave *Bothwel* Gold; and the Queen, that was too familiar with him, promised him her Favour, if he would deliver Mr. *Wischarde* into *Edinburgh* Castle, which he did. Shortly after, he was deliver'd to the Blood-thirsty Cardinal, who, seeing that it was forbidden by their Canon-Law for a Priest to sit as a Judge, upon Life and Death, he sent to the Governor, requesting him to appoint some Lay-Judge, to pass Sentence of Death upon Mr. *Wischarde*.

THE Governor would easily have yielded to his Request, but that *David Hamilton*, a godly Man, told him, That he could expect no better End than
Saul,

Saul, if he persecuted the Truth which formerly he had professed. Hereupon the Governor sent the Cardinal Word, that he would have no Hand in shedding the Blood of that good Man. The Cardinal being angry, return'd this Answer: *That he had sent to him of meer Civility, and that he would proceed without him*; and so to the great Grief of the Godly, the Cardinal carried Mr. *Wischard* to *St. Andrews*, and put him into the Tower there; and without any long Delay he caused all the Bishops, and other great Clergy-men to be called together to *St. Andrews*.

FEB. 28, 1546, Mr. *Wischard* was sent for to appear before them, to give an Account of his seditious and heretical Doctrine, as they called it. The Cardinal caused all his Retinue to come Armed to the Place of their Sitting, which was the Abbey Church. When Mr. *Wischard* was brought thither, there was a poor Man lying at the Door, that ask'd Alms, to whom he flung his Purse. Dean *John Winryme*, Subprior of the Abbey was appointed to preach; whose Sermon being ended, *Wischard* was put up into the Pulpit to hear his Charge. Then one *Lauder*, a Priest, standing over against him, read a Scroll full of bitter Accusations and Curses, so that the ignorant People thought that the Earth would have opened and swallowed up *Wischard* quick. But he stood with great Patience without moving, or once changing his Countenance. The Priest having ended his Curses, spat at Mr. *Wischard's* Face, saying: *What answerest thou? Thou Heretick, Runnagate, Traitor, Thief.* Then Mr. *Wischard* fell upon his Knees, making his Prayer unto GOD; after which he said: *Many and horrible Sayings unto me a Christian Man; many Words abominable for to hear, have ye spoken here this Day, which not only to teach, but even to think, I ever thought a great Abomination.* Then

Then he gave them an Account of his Doctrine, answering to every Article as far as they would give him Leave to speak.

BUT they, without any Regard to his sober and godly Answers, presently condemn'd him to be burnt. After which Sentence, he fell upon his Knees, and said: *O immortal GOD, how long wilt Thou suffer the Rage, and great Cruelty of the Ungodly to exercise their Fury upon thy Servants, which do further thy Word in this World? whereas, they on the contrary seek to destroy the Truth, whereby thou hast revealed thy self to the World. O LORD, we know certainly that thy Servants must needs suffer for thy Names Sake, Persecutions, Afflictions, and Troubles in this present World, yet we desire that Thou wouldst preserve and defend the Church which Thou hast chosen before the Foundations of the World, and give thy People Grace to hear thy Word, and to be thy true Servants in this present Life.*

THEN were the common People put out, the Bishops not desiring that they should hear the innocent Man speak, and so they sent him again to the Castle, till the Fire should be made ready. In the Castle came two Friars to him, requiring him to make Confession to them, to whom he said: *I will make no Confession to you, but fetch me the Man who preached e'en now, and I will speak with him.* Then was the Sub-prior called, with whom he conferred a pretty while, till the Sub-prior wept, who going to the Cardinal, told him that he came not to interceed for Mr. *Wischard's* Life, but to make known his Innocency to all Men; at which Words the Cardinal was very angry, saying: *We knew long ago what you were.*

THE Captain of the Castle with some Friends, coming to Mr. *Wischard*, asked him if he would break

break his Fast with them: *Yea*, said he, *very willingly, for I know you are honest Men*. In the mean Time, he desir'd them to hear him a little; and so he discoursed to them about the LORD's Supper, his Suffering and Death for us, exhorting them to love another, laying aside all Rancor and Malice, as becomes the Members of *Jesus Christ*, who continually interceeds for us to his Father. Afterwards he gave Thanks, and blessing the Bread and Wine, he took the Bread and brake it, giving it to every one, saying: *Eat this; remember that Christ died for us, and feed on it spiritually*: So taking the Cup, he bad them *remember that Christ's Blood was shed for them*. Then he gave Thanks and prayed for them, and so retir'd into his Chamber.

PRESENTLY came two Executioners to him from the Cardinal, one put upon him a black Linnen Coat, the other brought him Bags of Powder, which they tied about several Parts of his Body, and so they brought him forth to the Place of Execution; over against which Place, the Castle Windows were hung with rich Hangings, and Velvet Cushions laid for the Cardinal and Prelates, who from thence fed their Eyes with the Torments of this innocent Man. The Cardinal fearing lest *Wischard* should be rescued by his Friends, caused all the Ordnance in the Castle to be bent against the Place of his Execution, and commanded his Gunners to stand ready all the Time of his Burning. Then were his Hands bound behind his Back, and so he was carried forth. In the Way some Beggars met him, asking his Alms for GOD's Sake: To whom he said: *My Hands are bound wherewith I was wont to give you Alms, but the merciful LORD, who of his Bounty and abundant Grace feeds all Men, vouchsafe to give you Necessaries both for your Bodies and Souls*.

THEN

THEN two Friars met him, perswading him to pray to our Lady to mediate for him; to whom he meekly said: *Cease, tempt me not, I entreat you:* and so with a Rope about his Neck, and a Chain about his Middle, he was led to the Fire: Where falling upon his Knees, he thrice repeated: *O thou Saviour of the World have Mercy upon me. Father of Heaven, I commend my Spirit into thy Holy Hands.* Then turning to the People, he said: *Christian Brethren and Sisters, I beseech you be not offended at the Word of GOD for the Torments which you see prepared for me; but I exhort you that you love the Word of GOD for your Salvation, and suffer patiently, and with a comfortable Heart for the Word's Sake, which is your undoubted Salvation and everlasting Comfort. I pray you also shew my Brethren and Sisters which have often heard me, that they cease not to learn the Word of GOD (which I taught them, according to the Measure of Grace given to me) for no Persecution or Trouble in this World whatsoever: And shew them that the Doctrine was no old Wives Fables, but the Truth of GOD. For if I had taught Mens Doctrine, I had had greater Thanks from Men. But for the Word of GOD's Sake I now suffer, not sorrowfully, but with a glad Heart and Mind. For this Cause I was sent into the World that I should suffer this Fire for Christ's Sake. Behold my Face! You shall not see me change my Countenance. I fear not the Fire. And if Persecution come to you for the Word's Sake, I pray you fear not them that can kill the Body, and have no Power to hurt the Soul. Then he prayed for them which accused him, saying: I beseech Thee, Father of Heaven, forgive them that have of Ignorance, or of an evil Mind, forged Lies of me. I forgive them with all my Heart. I beseech Christ to forgive them that have condemned me this Day ignorantly. Then turning to the People again, he said: I beseech you Brethren, exhort your Prelates to learn the Word of GOD, that they may be ashamed to do Evil, and learn*

to do Good; or else there shall come upon them the Wrath of GOD which they shall not eschew. Then the Executioner upon his Knees, said: Sir, I pray you forgive me, for I am not the Cause of your Death. And he calling him to him, kissed his Cheeks, saying: Lo, here is the Token that I forgive thee. My Heart, do thine Office; and so he was tied to the Stake, and the Fire kindled.

THE Captain of the Castle coming near him, had him be of good Courage, and to beg for him the Pardon of his Sin; to whom Mr. Wischard said: *This Fire torments my Body, but no whit abates my Spirits.* Then looking towards the Cardinal, he said: *He who in such State from that high Place, feeds his Eyes with my Torments, within few Days shall be hanged out of the same Window, to be seen with as much Ignominy, as he now leans there with Pride; and so his Breath being stopp'd, he was consumed by the Fire.*

THIS Prophecy was fulfilled, for John Lesley, Brother to the Earl of Rothes, and Norman Lesley, his Cousin, together with 16 others, to revenge Wischard's Death, at the People's Instigation, surpriz'd the Cardinal's Castle; and Mr. Melvin, who had been very familiar with Wischard, enter'd his Chamber soon after Mrs. Ogleby had left him, who had lain with him all Night, and presenting him the Point of his Sword, said: *Repent thee of thy former wicked Life, but especially of Shedding the Blood of Mr. Wischard, which cries for Vengeance, and we are sent from GOD to revenge it:* And so he thrust him through the Body, who falling down, spake not a Word, only, *I am a Priest! I am a Priest! Fie! Fie! all is gone.* After the Cardinal was slain, the Provost raising the Town, came to the Castle Gates, crying: *Where is my Lord Cardinal?* They within answered: *Return, for he hath received his Reward.* But they cried: *We will never depart*

till we see him. Then the Lesleys hung him out at the same Window, so the People departed.

IN the Year 1550, *Adam Wallace*, a Man of no great Learning, but zealous in Godliness, and of an upright Life, by Order of the Bishop of *St. Andrews*, was apprehended and carried to *Edinburgh*. After a While he was brought to Judgment before Duke *Hamilton*, *Huntly*, and others. The Bishops and their Instruments accused him, that he took upon him to preach. He answered: *I never judged myself worthy of so excellent a Vocation, and therefore never took upon me to preach; but I deny not, that in private Places I often read the Word, and exhorted such as are willing to hear me. Knaue, quoth one, what have you to do to meddle with the Scriptures? I think*, said he, *it is every ones Duty to labour to know the Will of GOD, and to get ASSURANCE of his Salvation, which is to be found in the Old and New Testament.* What then, said another, shall we leave to the Church-men to do? He answered: *Their Work is publickly to preach the Gospel of Jesus Christ, and to feed the Flock, which He hath redeemed with his own Blood, as all true Pastors are commanded to do.* The Bishops being angry at this, charged him further, that he denied Purgatory, praying to Saints, and for the Dead. He answered: *I have oft read over the Bible, and yet found no Mention of Purgatory, nor Command to pray to the Saints, or for the Dead; therefore I believe, they are but mere Inventions of Men, devised for Covetousness Sake.* Then he asked him what he thought of the Mass? He answered: *I say as my LORD Jesus Christ said, that which is greatly esteem'd before Men, is Abomination before GOD.* Then they all cried out: *Heresy, Heresy*, and so adjudged him to the Fire, which he patiently underwent the same Day upon the Castle Hill.

The End of the SIXTH VOLUME.



THE CONTENTS

Of the SIXTH VOLUME.



	Page
The Persecution of the WALDENSES.	
B erengarius, a Preacher of the Truth —	11
Peter Bruis, a Preacher among the <i>Waldenses</i> — — — —	12
Henry of Tholouse, and Valdo of Lyons, Preachers	<i>ib.</i>
Pope Alexander III. K. Philip, and the Bishops of Mayence and Straßburgh persecute the <i>Waldenses</i> — — — —	13
The Pope makes a Decree against the <i>Gospellers</i>	14
The Dominican Monks, Inquisitors —	15
Devices of the Inquisitors to awe the People —	17
Enraudry burnt — — — —	<i>ib.</i>
Arnold Hott disputes with Didacus, &c. —	18
Diligence of the <i>Waldensian</i> Pastors —	20
The <i>Waldenses</i> of Pragela grievously persecuted	21
Persecution in the Valley of Frassiniera —	22
— in the Valley of Loyse —	23
— in Piedmont —	25
Many <i>Waldenses</i> burnt at Turin —	27
The Monks of Pignerol vex the Churches —	29

The CONTENTS.

	Page
The Persecution of the <u>WALDENSES</u> in <i>Calabria.</i>	30
The Rise of these <i>Waldenses</i>	30
Their Character	31
Persecution at St. <i>Xist</i> and <i>La Garde</i>	32
The cruel Death of <i>Charlin</i>	33
The Cruelties of <i>Panza</i> , the Inquisitor	34
 The Persecution of the <u>ALBIGENSES</u> ,	 36
Why called <i>Albigenses</i> , and why <i>Arnoldists</i>	36
The Death of Friar <i>Peter</i> charged on them, and a Persecution rais'd against them therefore	37
The Earl of <i>Tholouse</i> submits to the Pope's Legate	38
The City of <i>Beziers</i> besieged	40
The Legate's Speech to his Captains	41
<i>Carcasson</i> besieged	42
The Legate's Crossed Soldiers abandon him	44
The Earl of <i>Beziers</i> betray'd	ib.
The Inhabitants of <i>Carcasson</i> escape	45
Earl <i>Simon</i> of <i>Montfort</i> made General of the Pope's Army	46
He takes Possession of the Earl of <i>Beziers</i> Lands	ib.
<i>Boucard</i> taken Prisoner at <i>Cabaret</i>	47
Cruelty exercised at <i>Bern</i>	ib.
The Death of <i>Remund</i> , Lord of <i>Termes</i> , &c.	48
The Castles of <i>Termes</i> and <i>De la Vaur</i> besieged	49
The <i>English</i> assist the <i>Albigenses</i>	50
<i>Reynard</i> Lollard burnt	ib.
<i>Theodosius</i> excommunicates Earl <i>Remund</i>	51
Articles proposed to him	ib.
Earl <i>Remund</i> conquers Earl <i>Simon</i>	53
<i>Muret</i> besieged by the King of <i>Arragon</i>	55
The Castle of <i>Foix</i> besieged by Earl <i>Simon</i>	56
A Council at <i>Montpelier</i>	57
Another at <i>Lateran</i>	58
The Siege of <i>Tholouse</i>	59
A great Victory over Earl <i>Simon</i> 's Army	ib.
Earl <i>Simon</i> slain by a Woman	60
Earl <i>Guido</i> and <i>Almerick</i> make War upon the <i>Al-</i> <i>bigenfes</i>	61

The CONTENTS.

	Page
The Emperor <i>Frederick</i> makes a cruel Edict against them	61
Divers burnt at <i>Cologne</i>	62
Mr. <i>Pierpont</i> 's Speech to King <i>Henry III.</i>	ib.
The King of <i>France</i> marches against the Earl of <i>Tholouse</i>	63
Ten Thousand <i>French</i> slain	64
The <i>French</i> Army destroyed in <i>Provence</i>	66
Cruel Decrees against the <i>Albigenses</i>	67
The Opinions of the <i>Albigenses</i> spread to <i>Spain</i>	68
<i>Trancavel</i> overthrows the Legate's Troops	69
<i>Ameline</i> , the Legate, craves Aid of the Pope	70
A sick Woman burnt	ib.
Cruelty of Friar <i>Robert</i>	ib.
<i>Montreal</i> Castle besieged	71
Two Hundred <i>Albigenses</i> burnt	72
Several burnt in the Kingdom of <i>Arragon</i>	ib.
<i>William de Gourdon</i> , a Persecutor	ib.
The <i>Albigenses</i> Doctrine spreads to <i>Lombardy</i>	73
Persecution in <i>Passau</i>	ib.
<i>Walter Lollard</i> burnt	ib.
The Persecution of the Church of God in <i>Bohemia.</i>	
The <i>Bohemians</i> when and by whom first converted	75
<i>Borovcius</i> banished, and the Christians persecuted	76
<i>Bolislau</i> s a Persecutor	78
<i>Drahomira</i> swallowed up alive	ib.
<i>Matthias</i> of <i>Prague</i> banish'd	79
Tamult at <i>Prague</i>	80
Great Cruelty at <i>Cutttenburgh</i>	ib.
A Merchant burnt at <i>Breslaw</i>	ib.
Persecution at <i>Litomericia</i>	81
The Brethren in <i>Bohemia</i> and <i>Moravia</i> persecuted	84
Many <i>Waldenses</i> burnt at <i>Vienna</i>	85
Impudent Invention of the <i>Romanists</i>	86
Remarkable Judgment upon a Persecutor	89
The Baron of <i>Schanow</i> racked	91
Artifices used to impoverish the Protestants	95
Cruelty exercis'd on a Schoolmaster	97
A Minister tortured	98, 99, 101
	A Mi-

The CONTENTS,

	Page
Twenty-seven Men condemned	104
A Miracle	105
Execution of Lord Schlik	106
of Lord Wenceslaus	ib.
of Lord Harant	107
of Casper Kaplitz	108
of Procopius Dorzecki	109
of Lord Henry Otto	ib.
of Dionysius Servius	110
of Lord Rugenia	111
of Valentine Cockau	ib.
of Toby Steffick	112
of Jassenius	ib.
of Christopher Chober	113
of John Shultis	ib.
of Maximilian Hostiliac	ib.
of John Kutnaur	114
of Simeon Suffichey	115
of Nathaniel Wodniansky	ib.
of Wenceslaus Gisbitzky	ib.
Cruel Proceedings against the Protestants	116
Lord De Zerotine and others quit their Possessions	119
Persecution at Kuttensburg by Don Martin	121
at Bolislavia	122
at Litomericia	123
at Bidsove	124
at Tusta	125
at Rokizan	ib.
Troubles of John Felix	126
Persecution at Prachatice	ib.
Various Cruelties exercised upon the Protestants	127
Four Men cruelly tortured at Kossenburg	129
Sad Effect of Apostacy	130
Pope Martin stirs up the German Princes against the Bohemians	ib.

Persecution of the Church in France.

Divers burnt at Paris	133
J. Clark martyr'd	134
Martyrdom of J. Castellan	135
of Stephen Brune at Rutiers	ib.

Mar-

The CONTENTS.

	Page
Martyrdom of four Persons at <i>Roan</i> —	135
— of <i>Florent Venole</i> and others, at <i>Paris</i> —	136
— of <i>A. Audebert</i> at <i>Orleans</i> —	ib.
— of three Men at <i>Lyons</i> —	ib.
— of <i>M. Dimont</i> —	137
— of <i>S. Laloe</i> —	ib.
— of <i>Nich. Naile</i> —	138
— of <i>P. Serne</i> —	ib.
— of <i>N. of Jonvile</i> —	139
— of <i>A. du Bourg</i> —	ib.
— of <i>Augustine Marlorate</i> —	140

Persecution in the Time of the Civil Wars.

The Duke of <i>Guise</i> massacres many Thousands at <i>Voffy</i> —	143
He is shot at <i>Orleans</i> —	145
Persecution of <i>Fournier</i> —	ib.
Lady <i>Rene</i> courageously dares <i>Malicorn</i> —	147
Persecution at <i>Mons</i> —	148
— at <i>Angers</i> —	ib.
— at <i>Ligueul</i> —	149
— at <i>Tours</i> —	ib.
Murder of a Woman and her Daughter —	150
— of a godly Matron named <i>Glee</i> —	ib.
— of <i>M. de Valoungnes</i> —	151
Cruelties of <i>Montluc</i> —	152
— in <i>Cuillae</i> —	ib.
— upon <i>Castille Roques</i> —	153
— in <i>Tholoufe</i> —	154
— in <i>Limous</i> —	155
— in <i>Nonnay</i> —	ib.
— in <i>Foix</i> —	156
— in <i>Orange</i> —	ib.
— in <i>Mascon</i> —	ib.

The Massacre at Paris.

Stratagem of the King of <i>France</i> to get the Prote- stants together —	158
The Queen of <i>Nawarre</i> dies —	159
Admiral <i>Cbatillon</i> assaulted —	160
He is murdered by the Duke of <i>Guise's</i> Ruffians —	162
Horrible	

The CONTENTS.

	Page
Horrible Slaughter of the Protestants at <i>Paris</i>	163
—— at <i>Meaux</i> , <i>Trois</i> , and <i>Orleans</i>	165
<i>M. de la Place</i> murder'd	ib.
<i>P. Ramers</i> murder'd	167
Murder of a young Man	ib.
—— of a Child	ib.
<i>Coffet</i> a cruel Persecutor at <i>Meaux</i>	ib.
Slaughter of the Protestants at <i>Trois</i>	168
—— of a Counsellor at <i>Orleans</i>	170
Account of the Number massacred in <i>Paris</i>	171
Massacre at <i>Lyons</i>	172
—— in the Archbishop's House	ib.
—— of <i>F. de Bossu</i> and his two Sons	173
—— at <i>Tboloufe</i>	174

The Persecution of the Church in the *Valtelline*.

The Minister of <i>Tell</i> and his Congregation persecuted	176
Many Protestants murder'd and burnt in a Church	177
Massacre at <i>Sondres</i>	178
An <i>Italian</i> Lady cut in Pieces	179
<i>Dominico Berto</i> cruelly murder'd	180
A noble Virgin at <i>Sondres</i> murder'd	ib.
Massacres at <i>Caspana</i> , <i>Traben</i> , and <i>Bruse</i>	181

The Persecution of the Church of God in *Ireland*.

Authors of this Persecution	182
<i>Halligan</i> excommunicates all that succour the Protestants	183
Perfidiousness of the <i>Irish</i>	184
Miseries of the Protestants at <i>Colerane</i>	185
<i>M. Redman</i> and others stripp'd and abused	ib.
Many burnt and murder'd at <i>Lisgoil</i> and <i>Tulla</i>	186
Great Slaughter at <i>Liffenskeab</i> , in <i>Armagh</i> and <i>Tyrone</i>	187
<i>Mac Guire</i> , a vile Murderer	ib.
Several Thousands drowned at <i>Portendown</i> Bridge and other Places	ib.
<i>O Cane's</i> Treachery to the Protestants	188
<i>Armagh</i>	

The CONTENTS

	Page
<i>Armagh</i> burnt; many slaughter'd there, at <i>Killo-</i> <i>man</i> and <i>Kilmore</i> — — — — —	188
<i>J. Cowder</i> murder'd, and many massacred at <i>Cassel</i> — — — — —	189
<i>T. Mason</i> barbarously murder'd — — — — —	190
Several buried alive at <i>Clownes</i> — — — — —	ib.
Cruelties exercised at <i>Castle-Camber</i> and <i>Kilkenny</i> — — — — —	ib.
A <i>Scotchman</i> hewn in Pieces, and divers Women with Child ript up at <i>Newry</i> and other Places — — — — —	191
Barbarities used towards <i>Mr. Howard</i> , <i>Mr. Frank-</i> <i>land</i> , &c. — — — — —	ib.
The Castle of <i>Lisgool</i> burnt — — — — —	192
Many Protestants murder'd in Vaults and Cellars — — — — —	ib.
Many are famish'd. Unnatural Cruelties. — — — — —	193
A Child boiled to Death — — — — —	194
Ministers hanged at <i>Munster</i> — — — — —	ib.
<i>Walter Laverden</i> murder'd — — — — —	195
<i>Ellen Millington</i> buried alive — — — — —	ib.
Barbarous Sport at <i>Kilkenny</i> — — — — —	196
An <i>English</i> Woman cruelly burnt — — — — —	ib.
Many burnt in a House at <i>Kilmore</i> . — — — — —	ib.
The <i>Papists</i> blaspheme. — — — — —	197
Some Apostates are murder'd — — — — —	198
Murders in <i>Tipperary</i> — — — — —	ib.
<i>Hugh Kennedy</i> , a Murderer, drowns himself — — — — —	ib.
Slaughters in the County of <i>Maye</i> , in <i>Sligo</i> and <i>Tirawley</i> — — — — —	199
Remarkable Judgment at <i>Sligo</i> — — — — —	200
Murders at <i>Dungannon</i> , <i>Charlemont</i> , and <i>Tyre</i> — — — — —	201
Candles made of Human Fat — — — — —	ib.
<i>Sir Phelim O Neal</i> a Persecutor — — — — —	ib.
<i>Mr. Starkey</i> murder'd at <i>Armagh</i> — — — — —	202
Many Hundreds more in <i>Antrim</i> ; and at <i>Garvab</i> , &c. by <i>Sir Phelim O Neal</i> — — — — —	ib.
Twelve Thousand slain near <i>Down</i> — — — — —	203
Many slain by Children — — — — —	ib.
<i>Lord Mont Garret</i> a Persecutor — — — — —	ib.
Massacre in <i>Ulster</i> and <i>Munster</i> — — — — —	204
Apparitions at <i>Portendown Bridge</i> — — — — —	205

The CONTENTS.

	Page
Narrative of Cruelties in the Vallies of <i>Pied-</i> <i>mont</i> , in 1655.	206
<i>Protestants</i> Account of their barbarous Treatment by <i>Papists</i> — — —	209
M. <i>Du Petit Bourg's</i> Declaration — — —	211
S. <i>Rastignole des Vignes</i> murder'd — — —	212
Cruel Murder of M. <i>Constantine</i> — — —	ib.
P. <i>Simond</i> , J. <i>Perrin</i> , and others murdered — — —	213
<i>Giovanni Polanchion</i> , M. <i>Fontana</i> &c. abused and murdered — — —	214
A Girl roasted alive — — —	215
J. <i>Michelina</i> and <i>Giovanni Rostagnal</i> slaughter'd — — —	ib.
Several torn to Pieces with Gunpowder — — —	ib.
Jacob <i>di Rone</i> , P. <i>Garnier</i> , and D. <i>Cardon</i> cruelly murdered — — —	216
Several aged Women burnt — — —	217
Eleven Men burnt in a Furnace — — —	ib.
T. <i>Gros</i> , <i>Giovanni Pullius</i> , and others murder'd — — —	ib.
Sieur <i>Paulo Clement</i> hang'd — — —	218
The Marquiss of <i>Pianessa's</i> Speech — — —	ib.
M. <i>Pelanchion</i> , M. <i>Monino</i> , and J. <i>Baridono</i> cruel- ly slaughtered — — —	219
J. <i>Mondon</i> , G. <i>Barrolino</i> , M. <i>Revel</i> , G. <i>Salvagio</i> , G. <i>Mayo</i> , and others murdered — — —	220
A Narrative of the War in <i>Piedmont</i> , on Occa- sion of the Massacre.	
The Earl of <i>Christophle</i> attacks <i>Roras</i> — — —	222
Mario put to Fight at <i>Rumer</i> — — —	225
He dies in Despair — — —	226
Capt. <i>Gianavel</i> obtains a Victory over the Perse- cutors — — —	ib.
<i>Pianessa</i> commits great Slaughter — — —	227
The <i>Protestants</i> burn St. <i>Secondo</i> — — —	229
The <i>Papists</i> forc'd to fly — — —	231
They destroy one another at <i>Crusol</i> — — —	233
Capt. <i>Jabier</i> slain — — —	234
M. <i>Andrion</i> joins the <i>Protestants</i> — — —	236
The <i>Syndic</i> of <i>Lucerne</i> killed with Fear — — —	238
<i>Oliver Cromwell</i> interceeds for the <i>Protestants</i> — — —	239
	A Re.

The CONTENTS.

	Page
A Relation of the distress States of the Protestants in <i>Lithuania</i> .	244
Persecution in <i>Poland</i> — — —	250
The Rise and Destruction of <i>Lesna</i> — — —	252
Description of <i>Lesna</i> — — —	253
Plot against <i>Lesna</i> discover'd — — —	255
Jesuites and Monks stir up the Multitude against the Protestants in <i>Lesna</i> — — —	256
<i>Lesna</i> attack'd by the <i>Poles</i> — — —	258
Barbarities exercis'd on the <i>Lesnians</i> — — —	263
<i>Lesna</i> burnt — — —	265

The Persecution in the Netherlands.

<i>Philip</i> of Spain sends the Duke de <i>Alva</i> to root out the Protestants — — —	267
Don <i>Frederick</i> commits great Slaughter at <i>Zutphen</i> , <i>Nacrdem</i> , &c. — — —	268
Seignior <i>Noircarmes</i> besieges <i>Valenciennes</i> — — —	269
<i>J. Herwin</i> burnt — — —	270
Several martyr'd at <i>Antwerp</i> — — —	273
Story of <i>C. Gauderin</i> — — —	276
A Minister burnt near <i>Ghent</i> — — —	278
<i>P. Coulouge</i> and his Maid burnt — — —	279

6 JY 64

The Persecution in the Church of Scotland.

<i>Patrick Hamilton</i> burnt — — —	282
<i>D. Straton</i> and <i>N. Gourlay</i> burnt — — —	285
<i>J. Russel</i> and <i>A. Kennedy</i> burnt — — —	286
The Life of <i>George Wishard</i> — — —	287
A Prophecy — — —	288
A Priest Attempts to slay him — — —	290
He foresees a Design upon his Life, and escapes — — —	291
His Prophecy concerning the Gospel — — —	292
His Prophecy at <i>Haddington</i> — — —	295
He is apprehended and carried to <i>Edinburgh</i> — — —	296
He is led forth to be burnt — — —	300
His Prophecy concerning Cardinal <i>Beton</i> — — —	302
Cardinal <i>Beton</i> slain — — —	ib.
The Martyrdom of <i>Adam Wallace</i> — — —	303

